

Ananda K. Coomaraswamy

SPIRITUAL
AUTHORITY
AND
TEMPORAL POWER
IN THE
INDIAN THEORY
OF
GOVERNMENT

SA
294.5177
C78

SPI

Edited by

Keshavram N. Iengar and Rama P. Coomaraswamy

A literary work built up with parallel citations is apt to grow in the compass of the author himself, from his encyclopaedic scholarship.

This revised edition of one of Coomaraswamy's most significant writings is now being issued by incorporating his own additions to the printed first edition of 1942.

The Indian theory of government is expounded on the basis of the textual sources, mainly of the Brāhmaṇas and the Ṛgveda. The *mantra* in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa-viii, 27 by which the Priest addresses the King, spells out the relation between the spiritual and the temporal power. This 'marriage formula' has its analogous applications in the cosmic, political, family and individual spheres of operation, in each by the conjunction of complementary agencies.

The welfare of the community in each case depends upon a succession of obediences and loyalties; that of the subjects to the dual control of King and Priest, that of the King to the Priest, and that of all to the principle of an External Law (*Dharma*) as King of Kings. The King is such by Divine Right, but by no means an absolute monarch. He may do only what is correct under the Law. Self-control is the *sine qua non* for the successful government of others; the primary victory is that of the Inner Man.

"The application is to the 'King', the 'man of action' and 'artist' in any domain whatever. There is nothing that can be truly and well done or made except by the man in whom the marriage of the Sacerdotium (*brahma*) and the Regnum (*kṣatra*) has been consummated, nor can any peace be made except by those who have made their peace with themselves."

This is the fifth volume in the series of Indira Gandhi National Centre for the Arts programme of reprinting the 'Collected Works of A. K. Coomaraswamy.'

ANANDA K. COOMARASWAMY

*Spiritual Authority and Temporal
Power in the Indian Theory of
Government*

Edited by

KESHAVRAM N. IENGAR

and

RAMA P. COOMARASWAMY

INDIRA GANDHI NATIONAL CENTRE FOR THE ARTS,
NEW DELHI

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS
DELHI BOMBAY CALCUTTA MADRAS
1993

PS-1270

320.954
C78 SP

Oxford University Press, Walton Street, Oxford OX2 6DP

New York Toronto

Delhi Bombay Calcutta Madras Karachi

Kuala Lumpur Singapore Hong Kong Tokyo

Nairobi Dar es Salaam

Melbourne Auckland

and associates in

Berlin Ibadan

© Dr Rama P. Coomaraswamy 1993

ISBN 0 19 563143 9

Edited by
Keshavram N. Iengar
and
Rama P. Coomaraswamy

CPS/SSS

320.954

C78 Sp



PS1270



Phototypeset by Taj Services Ltd., Noida
Printed at Rekha Printers Pvt. Ltd., New Delhi-110020
and published by Neil O'Brien, Oxford University Press
YMCA Library Building, Jai Singh Road, New Delhi 110001

Foreword

Spiritual Authority and Temporal Power in the Indian Theory of Government written in 1942 marks the final transition of Coomaraswamy from the art-historian to the philosopher and metaphysician. It heralds the last phase of A. K. Coomaraswamy's writings on a vast number of subjects ranging from figures of speech or figures of thought to Symplegades to that final quintessence of maturity 'Time & Eternity'.

Coomaraswamy's preoccupation with the interdependence of the sacred and the profane, the transcendental and the mundane, the spiritual and the temporal, however, is not new. He had explored this in many essays, such as, Margi and Desi, now included in the volume entitled *Medieval and Oriental Theories of Art*. He pursued this concern in his studies in art history, specially in the context of Buddhist Art and Jaina Iconography. *Spiritual Authority and Temporal Power in the Indian Theory of Government* explores yet another dimension of this inter-play in the context of political theories.

To contemporary scholars of political theory, the very first sentence of the book, namely, 'the whole of Indian political theory is implied and subsumed in the words of the marriage formula, "I am That, thou art This, I am Sky, thou art Earth"' would come as a thunderbolt and yet, as the reader peruses the closely argued, densely written text, richly supported with references from primary material, Coomaraswamy's assertion becomes a revelation. He draws attention to the relation of the authorizing mind or the reason to the efficient power—that of the inner to the outer man as enunciated in the earliest text of the Indian tradition, the *Rgveda*. The juxtaposition of Mitra, Agni and Brahma as Divine archetypes of spiritual authority

and Varuna and Indra of the temporal (Regnum) as also the analogy of the marriage of the *Purohita* to the king unfolds the implicit as also explicit relationship of spiritual authority and temporal power. Each section also provides opportunity for comparison with other traditions, especially the Greek, thereby underlining the fact that the relationship between the spiritual authority and the temporal power was not restricted to the Indian tradition although there were many significant differences in approach.

With sharpness, Coomaraswamy identified the series of correspondences between the Sacerdotium and the Regnum. The Sacerdotium corresponds to the *Áśabda* Brahman and the Regnum to the *Śabda* Brahman. As is well known, the role of *Vāc* (speech) is primary and fundamental in the early Indian speculative thought: primacy is given to the silent and silence; the articulated *Sound* is secondary. *Anahata* and *hata* sound are the musical counterparts. In this context, king is the voice that gives effect to the purposes of silent, inarticulated spiritual authority. Logically, the royal voice or what is done vocally, is almost the Will of God.

As one reads and reflects on the deep insight of Coomaraswamy, it is clear that what is extracted out of these texts are essentials of a theory of governance, which transcends historical time and locale. Pertinently, he points out that the King is not a constitutional ruler whose actions merely reflect the wishes of a majority of the subjects or those of a secular Minister; nor is he the king by virtue of social contract but a ruler by Divine Right. However, this does not imply that he is an 'absolute ruler'. On the contrary, the King himself is the subject of another King (we may add, 'a higher king'). This is law (Dharma), the very principle of royalty and justice. This notion differs from the theory of divine right of Kingship or of the King representing or replicating God. Pertinently through a circuitous argument, Coomaraswamy returns to the original marriage-hymns. He reminds us of the Sky and the Earth, the universal parents upon whose harmonious cooperation the prosperity and the fertility of the universe depends; they are to be taken to be the norms

and archetype of all marriages. Thus, the analogy of marriage between the *Purohit* and the King becomes clear, for the *Purohit* here represents the Sacerdotium and the King, the Regnum. The priest and the Agni are representatives of the Sky and the King of the Earth and their marriage is an insurance against privation and death of the Kingdom. The two are complementary and interdependent and not one representing the other.

Coomaraswamy's volume drew response from the contemporaries—both positive and negative. His long-time associate, Professor George Sarton responded: 'I have received your excessively scholarly work and have profited by it'. Others, such as, Walter Shewring commented on the relevance of Coomaraswamy's work to contemporary political theory of governance. The relationship of the Government and the governed, the majority to the minority, of plutocracy and democracy, and the dangers of a final divorce of temporal power or political power from spiritual authority or a higher moral order, are issues of today and not yesterday only. Coomaraswamy underpins the perennial questions of an outer social order and an inner psychical order or 'He' or those empowered to govern. Through a series of analogies of ritual marriage of the priest and the King and the dimensions of the Sacerdotium and the Regnum, we are reminded that a temporal order can be sustained only if the centre of authority has its centre in a sacred-moral order.

Has this not contemporary relevance for the world today? A state of disorder, if not a chaos, is evident. These are not the consequences merely of economic imbalances, of socio-political ideologies, but, perhaps they have emerged from the man having cut asunder his inner and outer selves and his inability to relate spiritual authority or vision and the skills and structures of wielding temporal (today, political) power.

Professor Norman Brown—a most eminent Indologist—was no follower of Coomaraswamy, but, on reading this work he commented: 'Order prevails only where all authority finally vests in God. If it is thought to spring from the people, then cosmic principles are reversed'.

Keshavram N. Iengar, a scholar, almost a devotee of Coomaraswamy, has accomplished the very difficult job of editing this work, which is full of quotations, references from Sanskrit, Greek, Latin, Chinese sources. The Indira Gandhi National Centre for the Arts is grateful to him for having undertaken this along with the illustrious son of A. K. Coomaraswamy, Dr Rama P. Coomaraswamy. This is the fifth volume in the series of IGNCA's programme of 'Collected Works of A. K. Coomaraswamy'.

KAPILA VATSYAYAN

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

VEDIC/HINDU

AV = *Atharvaveda Samhitā*; RV. = *Rgveda Samhitā*; TS. = *Taittirīya Samhitā*; VS. = *Vājasaneyi Samhitā*; MS. = *Maitrāyaṇī Samhitā*.
 AB. = *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*; GB. = *Gopatha Brāhmaṇa*; JB. = *Jaiminiya Brāhmaṇa*; JUB. = *Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa*; KB. = *Kauśītaki Brāhmaṇa*; PB. = *Pañcaviniśa Brāhmaṇa*; SB. = *Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa*; TB. = *Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa*.
 AA. = *Aitareya Āraṇyaka*; ŠA. = *Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*; TA. = *Taittirīya Āraṇyaka*.
 BU. = *Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad*; CU. = *Chāndogya Upaniṣad*; ĪU. = *Īśāvāsyā Upaniṣad*; Kauṣ. Up. = *Kauśītaki Upaniṣad*; KU. = *Kaṭha Upaniṣad*; MU. = *Maitri Upaniṣad*; Mund. Up. = *Mundaka Upaniṣad*; Śvet. Up. = *Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad*; TU. = *Taittirīya Upaniṣad*.
 Arthaśāstra = *Kautilya's Arthaśāstra*; BD. = *Bṛhad Devatā*; BG. = *Bhagavad Gītā*; Br.S. = *Brahma Sūtras*; Mbh. = *Mahābhārata*; Manu. = *Manu Smṛti* or *Mānava Dharma Śāstra*; VP. = *Viṣṇu Purāṇa*; VyP. = *Vāyu Purāṇa*.

BUDDHIST

A. = *Āṅguttara Nikāya*; D. = *Dīgha Nikāya*; M. = *Majjhima Nikāya*; S. = *Saṃyutta Nikāya*; Sn. = *Sutta Nipāta*; Dh. = *Dhammapada*; J. = *Jātaka*; Mhv. = *Mahāvamsa*; Mv. = *Mahāvagga*; DA. = *Sumaṅgala Vilāsini*.

CHRISTIAN, GREEK & LATIN

AESCHYLUS: Suppl. = *Supplices*; Prom. = *Prometheus*.
 ARISTOTLE: Eth. = *Ethics*; Met. = *Metaphysics*; Pol. = *Politics*.

- BOETHIUS: De Consol. = *De Consolatione Philosophie*.
 CICERO: De div. = *De Divinatione*; De off. = *De officiis*.
 DANTE: Par. = *Paradiso*.
 EURIPIDES: Her. = *Heracles*; Hip. = *Hippolytus*.
 HERACLEITUS: Fr. = *Heraclitici Ephesii Reliquiae*.
 HERMES TRISMEGISTUS: Lib. = *Libellus*.
 OLD TESTAMENT: Cant. = *Canticle of Canticles or Song of Solomon*.
 PHILO JUDAeus: Abr. = *De Abrahamo*; Fug. = *De Fuga et Inventione*; Heres. = *Quis rerum divinarum heres sit*; Mosis. = *De Vita Mosis*; Op. = *De Opificio Mundi*; Prob. = *Quod omnis probus liber sit*; Sac. = *De Sacrificiis Abelis et Caini*; Somn. = *De Somniis*; Spec. = *De Specialibus Legibus*.
 PHILOSTRATUS: Vit. Ap. = *De Vita Appolonius*.
 PINDAR: Nem. = *Nemeonikai*.
 PLATO: Rep. = *The Republic*.
 SEXTUS: Emp. = *Sextus Empiricus*.
 ST. THOMAS AQUINAS: Sum. Theol. = *Summa Theologica*.
 WITELO: Lib. = *Liber de intelligentiis*.

JOURNALS

- Bib. Ind. = *Bibliotheca Indica*.
 HJAS. = *Harvard Journal of Asiatic Studies*; HOS. = *Harvard Oriental Series*; JAOS. = *Journal of the American Oriental Society*; JBORS. = *Journal of the Bihar and Orissa Research Society*; JISOA. = *Journal of the Indian Society of Oriental Art*; JRAS. = *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*; PTS. = *Pali Text Society Translation series*.; SBE. = *Sacred Books of the East*.

Note: Works not in the List of Abbreviations appear in the 'Text' and 'Notes' in full.

Spiritual Authority and Temporal Power in the Indian Theory of Government

Puro vo mandram divyam suvrktim prayati yajñe agnim adhvare dadhidhvam. RV.VI.10.1.

Tasmai viśaḥ svayamevā namante, yasmin brahmā rājani pūrva eti.
RV.IV.50.8.

Bhadrād abhi śreyah prehi, br̥haspatih puraetā te astu. TS.III.1.1.4.
Brahma purastān ma ugram rāṣṭram avyathyam asat. AB.VIII.I.
Predam brahma predam kṣatram. . . brahmakṣatrayoh samśritiyai.
AB.III.11.

Brahma sat kṣatram ucyate AV.X.2.23.

Rājan, satyam param brahma—satyam samgatam astu te. Mbh. I. 69.25 (Poona ed.)¹. See also Mbh. Śānti Parva, Chaps. 56 to 130—Bhiṣma's discourses on Rājadharma.

I

It may be said that the whole of Indian political theory is implied and subsumed in the words of the marriage formula 'I am That, thou art This, I am Sky, thou art Earth,' etc. addressed by the Brāhmaṇa Priest, the Purohita, to the King in AB.VIII.27. This being so, and as it has been pretended that these words were addressed by the King to the Priest,² it becomes desirable, if the theory is to be understood, to establish once for all that, as is explicitly stated by Sāyaṇa, it is the Purohita that utters them. A comparative study of many other contexts will show, indeed, that it is inconceivable that they should have been spoken by the King, who is unquestionably

the 'feminine' party in the 'marriage' of the Sacerdotium (*brahma*) and the Regnum (*kṣatra*).

We must premise that Mitrāvaraṇau, and likewise Indrāgnī or Indrā-bṛhaspatī, are syzygies or progenitive pairs (*mithunāni*): Mitra, Agni and Bṛhaspati being on the one hand the divine archetypes of the Sacerdotium or Spiritual authority (*brahma*) and Varuṇa and Indra those of the Regnum (*kṣatra*). We shall, for the most part, make use of the Brāhmaṇas, but it must not be overlooked that the institutions therein more fully described and explained are often referred to in the Rgveda. Thus in RV.X.52.5—'Into thy hands, O Indra, I (Agni) commit the bolt,' cf. RV.II.11.4—'We have laid the bolt in thy hands'³—corresponding to the *Accipe sceptrum* (the acceptance of the sceptre) of Western rites—is the making of the King *in divinis*. The relation of authorizing Mind or Reason (*kratu*) to the efficient Power (*dakṣa*), that of the inner to the outer man, is explicit in RV.VIII.13.1, 'Indra, at the Soma pressings, cleanses (*pūnīte*, Sāyaṇa *śodhayati-kathareitai*, cf. MU.VI.34.5f.) the enunciative Counsel (*kratum...* *ukthyām*); the Mighty wins increase of Power (*vidē vṛdhasya dakṣasah*'); cf. RV.X.31.2 and SB.IV.4.4.1 discussed below. In RV.X.124.4 Agni, the Sacrificial Priest (*agnir brahmā...* *vidhartā*, RV.VII. 7.5), is described as 'choosing' (*vṛmānah*) Indra: it is interesting to observe that already the Commons play a part in this election (*viśo na rājānam vṛmānah*, ib.8, cf. AV.III.4.2). The 'marriage' of the Purohita (Saptaṇu, Bṛhaspati) to the King is referred to in RV.X.47.1—'We have taken thee by the right hand,'⁴ spoken reproachfully with reference to Indra's arrogance and breach of the loyalty demanded by the marital relation of the Regnum to the Sacerdotium; as in BD.VII.54f. That the Purohita, as the designation itself implies, takes precedence of the King is explicit in RV.IV.50.7–9, 'To him the people of themselves pay homage, in whose realm the Brahmā goeth first.' (*yasmin brahmā rājani pūrva eti*), quoted in AB.VIII.27.⁵ The feudal relationship of the Regnum to the Sacerdotium is explicit in Agni's words addressed to Indra, 'I in person go before thee... and if thou givest me my share (or due), then shalt thou

through me, O Indra, perform heroic deeds' (*ayam ta emi tanvā purastād—yadā mahyam dīdharo bhāgam indrādin mayā kṛṇavo vīryāni*. RV.VIII.100.1)⁶. In RV.I.18.6 Sadasaspati (who must be Agni, cf. RV.I.21.5 *sadaspatī indrāgnī*) is called 'Indra's dear and lovable friend' (*priyam indrasya kāmyam*): in RV.I.80.1 it is the Brahmā that 'prospers' him (*brahmā cakāra vardhanam*). Cf. Buddhist *Śākyavardhana*.

Our starting point will be SB.IV.I.4, where the Mixta Persona of Mitrāvaraṇau is the 'Counsel and the Power' (*kratūdakṣau*, and TS.II.5.2.4 *dakṣakratū [prāṇāpanau]*) and 'these are his⁷ two selves', (*asyaitāv ātmanah*)⁸ . . . Mitra is the Counsel and Varuṇa the Power, Mitra the Sacerdotium (*brahma*) and Varuṇa the Regnum (*kṣatra*), Mitra the Knower (*abhiganṭr*) and Varuṇa the Executive (*karṭṛ*).⁹ Now at the beginning these two were distinct (*agre nānā*),¹⁰ the Sacerdotium and the Regnum: then Mitra the Sacerdotium could subsist apart from Varuṇa the Regnum, but Varuṇa the Regnum could not subsist apart from Mitra the Sacerdotium.¹¹ Whatever deed (*karma*) Varuṇa did that was not quickened (*aprasūtam*) by Mitra the Sacerdotium, was unsuccessful (*na . . . samānṛdhe*). So Varuṇa the Regnum called upon Mitra the Sacerdotium, saying: 'Turn thou unto me (*upa māvartasva*) that we may unite (*samsṛjāvahai*); I assign to you the precedence (*puras tvā karavai*)¹²; quickened by thee (*tvat prasūtah*) I shall do deeds.' That is, therefore, the origin of the Purohita's office. . . . Whatever deed, quickened by Mitra the Sacerdotium, Varuṇa did thenceforth, succeeded (*sam—ānṛdhe*). The choice is mutual; if either the Purohita or the King be ill chosen by the other it is called a commingling of right and wrong (*sukṛtam ca duṣkṛtam ca*).¹³

The expressions *puras tvā karavai* and *tvat prasūtah* imply the technical terms Purohita, Purodhāṭr, Rājasū and Rājasūya. The Purohita, literally 'one put in front,' 'one who takes precedence,' like Agni or Bṛhaspati *in divinis*, is the King's Brāhmaṇa adviser and minister (*brahma khalu vai kṣatrāt pūrvam*, AB.VIII.1). The Purodhāṭr is the King himself, who appoints the Purohita or, more literally, 'puts him in front.' The Devasvāḥ are the deities—Savitṛ, Agni, Soma, Bṛhaspati,

Indra, Rudra, Mitra and Varuṇa—by whom the King is ‘quickened’ through the Priest who invokes them as ‘King-quickeners’ (*rājasvah*), so that ‘It is these Gods that now quicken (*suvate*) him, and having been quickened (*sūtah*) by them, he is henceforth quickened’ (*svah sūyate*, ŚB.V.3.3.11,13).¹⁴ He rules, then by ‘Divine Right.’ The Rājasūya, or alternatively Varuṇasava is, then, the sacrificial and initiatory ritual of the ‘King’s Quickening’; the most essential part of this rite is an ‘aspersion’,¹⁵ (*abhiṣeka, abhiṣecanīya*), cf. AV.IV.8.1, and this corresponds to what would now be called a ‘Coronation’.¹⁶ The ‘Quickening’ refers to the fact that the rite is both initiatory and sacrificial; the King is brought forth, new-born from the initiatory death, by the officiating Priests who are, in this respect, his ‘fathers’.¹⁷

‘The Counsel and the Power’ are the equivalents of Plato’s essentials of good government, *philosophia* and *dynamis*¹⁸, of the Islamic ‘Mercy and Majesty’ (*jalāl* and *halāl*), in Christian theology of the spirit that giveth life and the letter that killeth (II Cor. III. 6), and of our ‘Right and Might.’ ‘Counsel’ (*kratu, kratos*) might have been rendered as ‘Will,’ in accordance with the definition in our text, SB.IV.1.4.1, ‘Whenever with one’s mind (*mánasa*) one wills (*kamáyate*) anything, such as “This I want” or “This I would do”, that is the ‘Counsel’,’ cf. RV.X.129. 4 *kámas . . . mánaso rétah prathamám*, AV.XIX.52, AA. I.3.2 *manasā hi sarvān kāmān dhyāyati . . . vācā hi sarvān kāmān vadati*, and JB.I.68 *mano ha vai prajāpatir devatā, so kāmayata*: or by ‘Authority,’ what we have a mind to do being the authority for what we actually do. The act expresses what was willed. This being so, we see that ‘the Counsel and the Power’ correspond to Philo’s poetic and ordaining ‘God’ and controlling ‘Lord’ (see note 7), or in other words to ‘his will’ and ‘him’ in Eph. I.II ‘the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his will.’ In TS.V.2.3.5 where the ‘Counsel’ is the beginning of the Sacrifice’ (*yajña-mukham*) and is deposited in the East (the place of origin of the *brahma*), Keith renders *kratu* by ‘inspiration,’ which is certainly a legitimate value when the application is to the individual realm, as in

RV.X.31.2 *uta svéna kratunā sám vadeta*, *kratu* here representing the Synteresis. It is preeminently Savitṛ, Br̥haspati, the *brahma* or Brahma (TS.V.3.4.4) that ‘inspires’ our contemplations (*dhiyo yó nah pracodáyāt*, RV.III. 62.10, the Gāyatrī or Sāvitrī): the Priest at once inspirits and inspires the King. When the Sacerdotium and the Regnum act together, then both possess the counseling power; in RV.I.93.5, for example, Agni and Soma are ‘of joint counsel’ (*sákratū*), as must also be understood in the many contexts in which the Regnum (Varuṇa or Indra) are possessed of ‘counsel’ or ‘counsels’ powers.

Thus Manas, ‘Mind’, or rather ‘intellect’¹⁹—regularly equated with Prajāpati (TS. and ŚB. *passim*), and often with the Breath—corresponds to *kratu*, the ‘Counsel’ and to *abhigantṛ*, the ‘Knower’: and Vāc, the ‘Voice’—the daughter, messenger, only property and bride of Manas-Prajāpati (ŚB.VIII.1.2.8, TS.II.5.11.5, PB.XX.14.2, AB.V.23, etc.)—corresponds to dakṣa, the ‘Power’ and *kartr*, the ‘Executive’ or ‘Agent’—Br̥haspati is the Spiritual power, Vāc the Royal’ (*brahma vai br̥haspatir . . . vāg vai rāṣṭri*, AB.I.19, Cf. Vāc as *rāṣṭri* in RV.VIII.100.10 and X.125.3). The Sacerdotium as Director corresponds to the *ásabda* Brahma, and the Regnum as Factor to the *śabda* Brahma. It is with reference to the *śabda* Brahma (the ‘spoken Word’) that it is said in JUB.II.9.6 that ‘Vāc is the *brahma* (*mantra*), and that this air’ (i.e. a vibration), and with reference to the *ásabda* Brahma that it is said in JUB.I.43.3 that ‘Vāc is whatever is on this side of Brahma (i.e. “under the Sun”), and it is taught that what is elsewhere is Brahma.’ Br̥haspati, Brahmanaspati, the silent Brahmā, is to Vāc as is the silent to the audible Brahma. (‘Brahmanaspati is the Brahma’, PB.XVI.5.8). She exists in him more eminently (silence is golden, speech is silver); but without her ‘support’ no enunciation of his Will is possible.

In a traditional society, whatever is said by whoever ‘has the say-so’ is ‘no sooner said than done’.²⁰ It is not with his hands but by his fiat²¹ or edicts that a King works’. He is the ‘Voice’ that gives effect to the purposes of the Spiritual authority, and thus does the will of God on earth.²² ‘What is done vocally is

done indeed' (*vācā kṛtam karma kṛtam*, *Mahanarayana Up.* IV.7). Just as *in divinis* 'Indra, the Regnum, is the Voice' and it is by this voice that Agni performs the Sacrifice (*karoty eva vācā . . . gamayati manasā*, JUB.I. 33.4), so it is at the Royal Sacrificer's word of command that the 'work' (*karma*, the sacrificial work essential to the welfare of the kingdom) is done (ŚB.I.9.1.2,3); 'it is with the voice that he says 'Do this', and therewith the altar is built' (ŚB.X.5.1.1).²³ The dual government 'knows all purposes intellectually (*manasā hi sarvān kāmān dhyāyatī*) and announces them verbally' (*vācā hi sarvān kāmān vadati*, AA.I.3.2). Just as the Purohita is 'preferred', so Intellect takes precedence of Voice (*purastād vācas . . . caratī*) . . . and were it not for Intellect, the Voice would only babble'²⁴ (ŚB.III.2.4.11, where for *manas* and *vāc* could be substituted *brahma* and *kṣatra*; cf. ŚB.I.4.5.11): even in the ritual, whatever is uttered by a Hotṛ that has not been prompted by the Mitrāvaraṇa (Brahmā) is *asurya* (AB.II.5). We have seen that what the Purohita 'knows' (*abhigantī*) the King performs (*kartrī*): in other words 'the Voice speaks not but what is "known" (*abhigatam*) by Intellect' (ŚB.IV.6.7.10), and of this filial and wisely obedience we can say truly that 'the discipline of Logos, caught up with the vision of Mythos, is a royal marriage' (L.F. Kinney, in *Journal of Philosophy*, XXXIV, 1937, p. 358).

When the royal 'Voice' is thus informed, 'what is done vocally is done indeed' (*yad vāva vācā karoti tad etad evāsyā kṛtam bhavati*, JUB.II.2.8)²⁵: Priest and King speak 'with one voice', and just as it is only when instigated (*prasūtahī*) by the Sacerdotium that the King is effective (ŚB.IV.1.4.5), so in the same way 'whatever the subject does uninstituted (*aprasūtahī*) by these two, the Sacerdotium and the Regnum, is misdone (*akṛtam*) and men belittle it, saying: "Even what he does is un-done" (*akṛtam*)' (AB.II.38)²⁶. It follows from the foregoing that it is not for the King to say (command) or do anything or everything he likes, but only what is 'ordered to the end' and thus 'correct' (*sādhu*, ŚB.V.4.4.5)²⁷. The King, in other words, is a *sādhaka*, whose 'art' is the science of government, the 'King's leading' or 'policy' (*rājanīti*, *nītiśāstra*), in which the

Purohita has been his Master: for 'science' (*vidyā*, i.e. truth as distinguished from opinion) is a combination, or ensemble (*samhita* = *samdhī*), or in other words the child, of Intellect and Voice, both of which are essential to an enunciation of truth, and just as in the case of the macrocosmic and microcosmic harps, of which the concert (*samhitā*) of the player with the instrument²⁸ is the force (*tviṣī*), so it is only the skilled speaker that 'perfects the value of the Voice' (*kṛtsnam vāgartham sādhayatī*), and it is especially pertinent that it is said of him who understands this doctrine of the wedding of sound and meaning that 'His renown fills the earth, men hearken to him when he speaks in the assemblies, saying: 'Let this be done which he desires'' (ŚA.VII.7, VIII.9.10, XIV). The essentially vocal character of government is well brought out in PB.XII.10.4,5 where, when in the Rājasūya (quoting the text of RV.VIII. 70.1,2, 'He who is the King of men, etc.') it is said: 'At that very point they reach the reign of the Voice (*rājyam . . . Vācaḥ*), and thereby they betake the royal Sacrificer to his reign' (*rājyam evaitayā yajānam gamayanti*).

This is why the King cannot be allowed to talk at random, to say what he likes, but only to speak wisely; this is why the Kṣatriya, who is so much like a woman in other respects, is said to love wisdom (*paññā* = *prajñā*), where she loves ornaments (*alāmkāra*, A.III.363). For the King is only a true King in so far as he is in possession of his royal art or science, in so far as he does not fail of the end (*na hīyate arthāt*), and does not miss the mark (*sādhu bhavati*, *nāparādhātī*); he is only a 'right' (*sādhu*) ruler in so far as he is governed by his art, but 'crooked' (*vrjina*) if he is guided not by the truth but by his own inclinations: that *ars sine scientia nihil* is as true of the art of government as of any other.

If the Oriental and traditional Monarch is not a 'constitutional ruler' whose actions merely reflect the wishes of a majority of his subjects or those of a secular minister, nor King by virtue of any 'social' contract, but a ruler by Divine Right, this does not imply that he is an 'absolute' ruler, but on the contrary that he is himself the subject of another King, as is explicit in A.I.109, an

echo of BU.I.4.14 (*tadetat kṣatrasya kṣatram yaddharmaḥ*)²⁹, where it is affirmed that the Law (*dharma*), than which there is nothing higher, is the very principle of royalty and justice. We see, accordingly, what ultimate value attaches to the expression 'King of Kings' (*adhirājo rājñām, patīnām paramam patim*, Svet. Up. VI.7), and that while the 'constitutional monarch' may be controlled by his equals, or even his inferiors, the ruler by Divine Right is controlled by a Superior.

Let us consider the marriage of Indrāgnī in ŠB.X.4.15, where Agni is expressly the Sacerdotium (*brahma*) and Indra the Regnum (*kṣatra*). They say to one another: 'So long as we are thus, apart, we shall be unable to bring forth offspring; let us twain become a single form' (*ekām nīpam ubhāv asīva=sambhavāvahai* as in JUB.I.54.6=*saha nāv astu* in PB.VII.10.1), i.e. as we should say 'become one flesh'. Accordingly 'They twain became one form'³⁰ (*ekām nīpam ubhāv abhavatām*), that of the Fire itself, and thereby brought forth offspring. The verses following (5–8) explain that in the concrete symbolism of the Fire-Altar, Agni is represented by the Golden Person (*puruṣa*) and Indra by the gold plate (*nukma*) that were deposited, and which represent the Person in the Sun, and the Solar Disk itself, respectively (cf. BU.II.2.2 for an analogous distinction in terms of the 'pupil' and the 'white' of the solar and microcosmic eyes); that Agni is represented by the 'baked' (i.e. mature) material of the Altar and Indra by the 'unbaked' ('half-baked', immature) material, whereas when the Fire is blazing this distinction disappears, the whole is 'fired' and fiery (cf. 'It is this Agni that he thus kindles by these two, the *brahma* and the *kṣatra*', ŠB.VI.6.3.15 and ŠB.X.4.1.5–9). Thus Indra becomes of one progenitive form with Agni, the form of the Sacrifice itself, from which the Sacrificer is to be reborn, the Fire being a womb (*agnir vai devayonih*, AB.II.14) into which the Sacrificer inseminates himself (JB.I.17, etc.) and from which the Priest brings him to birth (*yajñād devayonyai prajanayati*, AB.III.19).

The ἵερος γάμος (*hieros gamos*) is effected again in TS.V.2.4 where there is union (*samiti, samnivapana*) of the two Agnis, viz.

'Agni that was before and the one (now kindled) in the Fire-pan, who hate one another' (*samanasau sacetasau arcapasau*, ŠB.III.4.1.24; *vi . . . aviṣāte*), incidentally a very significant statement of the natural opposition of the Conjoint Principles. Their union is effected with the marital formula of TS.IV.2.5.1 'Be ye united, of one intention, loving one another (*sámitām sámkalpethām śampriyau*) . . . I have conformed your minds, operations³¹ and wills (*sam vām manānsi sam vratā sam u cittāny ā'karam*) . . . Be ye unanimous, sharing one home, for our sake' (*bhavatain nah sámanasau samokasau*), cf. RV.V.3.2 b, X.65.8 *samokasā dyāvāprthivī varunāya savrate*, RV.X.191.24, and AV.III.8.5³². The last words 'Be ye unanimous, etc.' occur also in TS.I.3.7 where they are used for the union of the Fire-sticks, equated with Purūrvas and Urvaśī as parents of Agni-Āyus. With this marriage of those 'who hate one another', cf. RV.X.191, and AV.III.30 'Let not brother hate brother (*mā bhrātā bhrātarām dviṣat*. . . an incantation (*brahma*) in virtue of which the Gods are neither sundered from nor hate one another' (*na viyanti na ca vidviṣate mithah*) of which the application is also to 'husband and wife' (*pati, jāyā*), i.e. Sky and Earth, the Father who separates from his Daughter (RV.X.61.6 *viyāntā*), these 'Two worlds' that go apart from one another (AV.III.31.4 *vīmē dyāvāprthivī itāḥ*; TS.V.1.5.8 *imaū lokaū vy aitām*, V.2.3.3 *dyāvāprthivī . . . viyatī*; AB.IV.27 *tau vyaitām*; PB.VII.10.1 *tau viyantau*, etc.).

This union of mutually antagonistic principles, the 'former' and the 'latter', i.e. elder and younger, is essentially that of Varuṇa with Mitra, for 'Thou, Agni, art born as Varuṇa, and it is as Mitra that thou art kindled (RV.V.3.1)³³. It is the former, chthonic (*puriṣya-budhnya*)³⁴ Agni that is Varuṇa, and 'not Mitra', which is as much as to say *amitra*, 'unfriend': 'that which is of Mitra is not of Varuṇa' (ŠB.III.2.4.18), 'the Regnum takes no delight in the Sacerdotium' (ŠB.XIII.1.5.2). The 'two Agnis' (cf. Philo, creative and destructive ('useful') fires) are the same as those of TS.V.2.7.6, AB.III.4 and ŠB.II.3.2.10, one whose form is that of Varuṇa and 'deadly to be touched', and the other 'whom one approaches, making him Mitra'

(mitrakṛtyevopāsate).³⁵ They are the Agni 'tied up', who as Varuṇa may attack the Sacrificer, and the Agni whose 'unloosing' disperses the wrath (*meni*) of Varuṇa (TS.V.1.5.9 V.1.6.1). The two Agnis correspond not only to Indra and Agni, Regnum and Sacerdotium, but to the two possibilities of the Sacerdotium itself: for 'the Purohita is (originally) Agni Vaiśvānara of the five wraths' (*pañcameni*),³⁶ and if he be not 'offered to, pacified and endeared' he repels the Sacrificer 'from the world of Heaven, from the Regnum, might, realm and subjects', so that the King is well advised to make a Mitra, a 'Friend', of him,—'He that is friendly with such a one, that King routs him who hates him' (*tasya rājā mitram bhavati dvīṣantam apabādhate*) (AB.VIII.24, 25 and 27).³⁷

The marriage in JUB.I.53–55 is not explicitly one of the Sacerdotium and Regnum, but of principles that are their equivalents in other contexts. The marriage is of the Two Worlds; referred to as 'abodes' (*āyatanañi*): 'In the beginning This (all) was two-fold, Being (*sat*) and Non-being (*asat*) both. Of these two, the Being is the Chant, the Intellect, Spiration (*sāman, manas, prāṇa*); the Non-being is the Verse, the Voice, Expiration (*r̥c, vāc apāna*). . . . She, this Verse, desired intercourse with (*mithunam*) with him, the Chant. He asked her: "Who art thou?" She answered: "I am She" (*sāham asmi*). "Then, indeed, am I He (*aham amo'smi*)," he replied. What "She" (*sā*) is and what "He" (*ama*), that makes "Chant" (*sāman*), and this is the quiddity of the "Chant".³⁸ "Nay", said he, "for thou art my sister, forsooth". She then continues to woo her brother, who at last consents (which is, of course, the 'happy ending' to the abortive wooing of Yama by Yāmī in RV.X.10).³⁹ When the consummation is about to take place, the well-known words of the marriage formula are uttered, 'I am "He" thou art "She"; thou art "She", I am "He". She cooperating with Me (*sāmām anuvratā bhūtvā*), let us twain generate progeny (*prajāh prajanayāvahai*); come, let us consort' (*ehi sambhavāvahai*).⁴⁰ They became the Virāj ('Who knoweth her *mithunatva*?', AV.VIII.9.10) and 'brought forth (*prājanayatām*) "Him who glows yonder" (the Sun, the Sāma, the "Golden Person" of

JUB.I.48.8);⁴¹ they ran apart (*vyadravatām*—SB.IV.6.7.9 *vy eva dravata*), (she) saying: 'He hath come into being from me' (*mad adhy abhūt*),⁴²—whence the expression 'Honey-son' (*madhu-putra*).⁴³ In the preceding version of JUB.I.50.1–2, the 'Two Worlds' are explicitly Sky and Earth, and it is the Gods who call upon them to unite (*sametam*, cf. RV.X.24.5 *abruvan devāḥ punar ā vahatād iti*), and the reluctance of the Sky is his 'horror' of her (*so'sāv asyā abibhatsata*), and it is only after elaborate purifications that they unite (*sametya*, converse of *vivantā*, etc., elsewhere), and engender the Solar Chant.

That the marriage of the two Agnis, the former and the latter, 'who hate one another', should be that of Mitra and Varuṇa is in perfect agreement with the common doctrine that Mitrāvaruṇau form a progenitive pair (*mithunam*, as in SB.IX.5.1.54), a syzygy of conjoint principles, in which Mitra is the male and Varuṇa the female partner, an 'opposition' or 'polarity' which is that of Day to Night, of Light to Darkness (TB.I.7.10.1 *maitram vā ahaḥ vāruṇī rātriḥ*, etc.). References to Mitrāvaruṇau as *prāṇapānau* (or *prāṇodānau*) and as *brahmakṣatrau* are too many for separate citation. More explicitly in PB.XXV.10.10 and SB.I.8.1.27 *Idā, maitrāvaruṇī*, as also SB.II.4.4.19 'Mitra inseminates (*retah siñcati*) Varuṇa', and in SB.IV.1.4.4 Mitra and Varuṇa 'united', in SB.XII.9.1.17 Varuṇa is the womb (*yoni*), Indra the seed (*retas*), and Savitṛ the progenitor (*rētasah prajanayitṛ*), an obvious allusion to the Varuṇasava and the birth of Indra; Varuṇa, in other words, being Sāvitṛ, and as such the mother of the solar Indra.⁴⁴ In Mbh.XII.319.39 Mitra is *puruṣa* and Varuṇa *prakṛti*⁴⁵. The same relations subsist when the names of Mitrāvaruṇau are replaced by the terms *apara* and *para brahma* (*mahad-brahma, brahma-yoni*)⁴⁶ as in BG.VII.5–6 and XIV. 3–4 where Kṛṣṇa sets the embryo (*garbham*) in the Great Brahman, his own higher Nature (*prakṛtim parām*, i.e. 'Natura Naturans, Creatrix Universalis, Deus'), the womb (*yoni*) of all and whence is the becoming of all things, saying also that 'I am the father that bestows the seed' (*bijapradaḥ pitā*). It is accordingly quite in order that so

many of the terms expressing the relations of Mitrāvaruṇau, should have a sexual connotation. *Abhiganṭ*, for example, like Latin *cognoscere* and Greek γιγνώσκω (*gignosco*), Sanskrit *jñā* and English 'know' ('Jacob knew his wife'), has an erotic value that is even more evident in ŠB.IV.6.7.10 where what is uttered by Vāc is literally a 'conception' fathered by Manas (*manasā abhigatam*). The invitation *úpa māvartasva sámsrāvahai* (ŠB. cited above) corresponds to the marital *mām anuvratā bhūtvā . . . sambhavāvahai* of JUB.I.54.6 and the marriage formula of AV.XIV.2.71, 'I am He, thou art She; I am the Harmony, thou the Words; I am Sky, thou art Earth. Let us twain here become one; let us bring forth offspring' (*āmo 'hām asmi, sā tvām, sāmā 'hām asmy' āk tvām, dyaúr ahám, pṛthivī tvām; tāv ihā sām bhavāva, prajām ā janayāvahai*), echoed in that for the marriage of Sacerdotium and Regnum in AB.VIII. 27, discussed below. In the same way in ŠB.X.4.1.8, in connection with the union of Sacerdotium and Regnum, here represented by Indrāgnī, *ékām rūpam abhavatām . . . prājanayataḥ* corresponds to *tau virād bhūtvā prajanayatām* with reference to the union of the Two Worlds.

Amongst the syzygies to which we have referred it is that of the Two Worlds, Sky and Earth (*dyāvāpṛthivī*, Zeus and Gaia), the universal parents upon whose harmony depend the prosperity and fertility of the entire universe, which is chiefly taken to be the norm and archetype of all marriage. Thus the *samiti* or *samsṛṣti* of *brahma* and *kṣatra* is, in the sense in which the Brāhmaṇas demand in every ritual operation, a conjunction (*mithunam*) of contrasted forms, apart from which contrast there would be no effective and productive coupling. The spark of life is only evoked, the sacrificial fire is only kindled, the music only illuminated when contact has been established between two oppositely charged poles, the two ends of the 'Pole' that connects the Altar with the Sun, a pole that is 'fired' from above and 'lit' from below.

The relative femininity of Varuṇa will be all the more apparent if, in accordance with 'the generally received opinion' (Macdonell) that Mitra is the Sun and Varuṇa the

(dark) sky, the solar 'domain', we consider the relation of the Sun (Āditya) to the Sky (Dyaus): for there are many texts that refer to the Sun as the husband of the Sky, *páti diváḥ*, as in AV.VII.21.1 and XIII.3.4.1.⁴⁷ and *dyaureva sā ādityah amah tatsāma*, CU.I.6.3, where 'He' (*ama*) is the Sun and 'She' (*sā*) the Sky. That 'The Sun inseminates the Sky' (*reṭah kṛṇoti . . . ādityo divi*, JB.II.241), that He 'forms his likeness in the womb of the Sky' (*sūryyo rūpām kṛṇute dyōrupasthe*, RV.I.115.5), are no more than paraphrased in the words 'Mitra inseminates Varuṇa', cited above from PB. and ŠB. It is as the Sun that Prajāpati unites with the Sky (*ādityéna divam mithunām samabhavat*, ŠB.VI.1.2.4, and for Mitrāvaruṇau: *mithunām . . . yena prajāyate*, ŠB.II.4.4.10,18). Dyaus is conspicuously feminine in JUB.III.4.5f. where 'The Great with the Great, the God with the Goddess, Brahma with the Brāhmaṇī united' (*mahān mahyā samadhatta, devo devyā samadhatta, brahma brāhmaṇyā samadhatta*), the text (as in ŠA.I.6) going on to explain that the reference is to the union of Agni, Vāyu, and Aditya with Earth (*iyam eva mahī*), Air (*antarikṣa*) and Sky (*dyaus; brāhmaṇī* implying, of course, 'daughter of Brahma'), and that Agni, Vāyu and Āditya are the 'Threefold Brahma' (verse 11, *tad brahma vai trivṛt*, cf. MU.IV.6). To this 'Threefold Sovereign' correspond the 'Threefold' (*trivṛtam*) World of RV.X.114.1, the 'Three Bright' Realms (*usrā . . . tisrah*) that Bṛhaspati reveals in RV.X.67.4=ūṣas tisrah in VIII.41.3, and the 'One-syllabled' Voice whose three parts, distinguished by Prajāpati, are these worlds, as explained in PB.XX.14.2–5.

Dyaus is feminine in some twenty Vedic contexts: the apposition *dyaur aditiḥ* (Grassmann, 'der Himmel bildlich als Mutter' {='heaven figured as mother'}) may be noted in X.63.3, where Aditi is the 'Vāc, Aditi by name, in whom may Savitṛ quicken the Law (*dhárma sāviṣat*) for us' of TS.1.7.7.1. This implied equation of Dyaus with Sāvitri (the form again implying 'daughter of,' cf. the relation of Varuṇa to Savitṛ in ŠB.XII.9.1.17 cited above) is explicit in JUB.IV.27.11,12 'The Sun is Savitṛ, the Sky his daughter . . .

this is one coupling' (*āditya eva savitā, dyuas sāvitrī . . . tad ekam mithunam*), as likewise in ŚA.1.5. Sāvitrī, 'daughter of Savitṛ', is the same as the Sūryā Sāvitrī, the Daughter of the Sun, given to Soma the King in AB.IV.7, and the Sūryā of RV.X.85.9, who is there and in AV.XIV.2 the type of all brides. In AB.III.48 Sūrya is Dhātṛ (m.) and Dyaus Anumatī (Gāyatrī, f.). Savitṛ is, again, Prajāpati (*bhūvanasya prajāpatih*, RV.IV.53.2, etc.), the universal Progenitor, and it is as such that he unites with his own daughter 'whom some call Sky and others Dawn' (*divam vośāsam vā*, SB.1.7.4.1; AB.III.33).⁴⁸ while as Manas (TS.VI.6.10.1, etc.) he unites with Vāc (*passim*), who is again the daughter (VS.XV.38, SB.VIII.1.2.8) as well as the mother of whom he is born (PB.VII.6).⁴⁹ The Sun is thus beyond any question male to the Sky: {Bergaigne's 'Avant tout les autres éléments mâles il faut placer le ciel lui-même' is only true with the reservation 'Le mâle du ciel est le soleil' (*La religion védique*, I.4 and 6).} {Bergaigne's 'Before all the other male elements, we must place the sky itself' is only true with the reservation 'The male of the sky is the sun'. (*La religion védique*, I.4 and 6).} cf. SB.1.7.2.7.⁵⁰

One further point. The marital relation of Sacerdotium to Regnum, *in dīvinis*, is incestuous, for it is the marriage of the Sun with his daughter Sūryā that is reflected in Prajāpati's union as Āditya with the Sky (*dīvam mithunām sambhavat*, cited above), that the 'Father's' union with 'his own daughter' (*svām duhitaram*, RV.X.61.7) that is referred to (as Sāyana recognizes) in Prajāpati's union with 'his own daughter' (*svām duhitaram*), whom some call Sky (*divam*) and others Dawn' in AB.III.33; a daughter that is also Vāc, Prajāpati's 'own' (*svam*, PB.XX.14.2), of whom he begets the Br̥hat as his eldest son in PB.VII.6,⁵¹ he being Manas (TS.II.2.11.5, SB.IX.4.1.12, JB.I.68, JUB.I.33.2) and Vāc the daughter of Manas (SB.VIII.1.2.8).⁵² This is likewise the story of Yama and Yamī (RV.X.10). Heaven and Earth or as in SB.VII.2.1.10 Agni and Earth, of which the 'happy ending' is related in JUB.I.53–54; for the relationship of 'father to daughter' is more intelligibly that of 'twin brother and sister,' the conjoint principle of an

original syzygy, that of the Ātman, Puruṣa, *yathā strī-pumānsau sampariṣvaktau* in BU.I.4.3. 'For "man-woman" (*androgynos = ardhānārī*) was then a unity in form no less than name, participating equally in both the sexes, male and female' (Plato, *Symposium*, 189E), and it is just because she reflects that 'he has just produced me from himself' (*ātmāna eva janaitvā*) that she protests 'How now can he have intercourse with me?' (*katham nu...sambhavati*, BU.I.4.4.). The separated feminine nature is no longer innocent.⁵³

The relationship of Sun to Sky⁵⁴ (*ādityo vai brahma dyaur brāhmaṇī*, JUB.III.4.9), discussed above is the same as that of Vāyu to Air and Agni to Earth (which last is also that of Yama to Yamī, SB.VII.2.1.10): the ratio is by no means peculiar to the 'upper world', but to all 'Three Worlds', and to all the pairs in any of these worlds; the relationship is 'universal'. As was also implied in JUB.III.4.5f., cited above, the Three Gandharvas or Lights, Agni, Vāyu, Āditya (the 'Persons' of the Vedic 'Trinity' (PB.VI.7.2.3), and the 'Universal Lights' of the Fire-altar) form with their respective domains, 'lots' or 'participations' (*bhakti*), Earth, Air and Sky, three forms of Dawn (*uśas*), three progenitive pairs or syzygies (*mithunāni*, PB.XX.15.2–4). The text of RV.VII.33.7 (followed in PB. ib. and JB.II.241) is even more explicit: 'Three foremost Lights, three Aryan children, inseminate the worlds (*kṛṇanti bhuवaneśu rētas*), three Heats (*gharmāsah-gharmā*, du. + Mātarīśvan in RV.X.114.1 = *trīn gharmān* in AV.IX.1.8) ensue the Dawn (*uśasām sacante*); these the Vasiṣṭhas know full well'; cf. RV.III.56.3 'The mighty three-faced (*tryanikāḥ*) Bull is the husband (*patyate*), he the inseminator of the Everlasting Dawns' (*retodhā . . . śāśvatīnām*),⁵⁵ the 'Three Greats' (*tisrō mahīḥ*) of the preceding verse (= Ilā, Sarasvatī, and Mahī, III.5.8); RV.VII.101.6 'He (Parjanya), the Bull, the inseminator of the Everlasting-Dawns (*sā retodhā vṛṣabhāḥ śāśvatīnām*), in whom is the Spirit of all that is in motion or at rest' (*tásminn ātmā jágatas tasthūṣāś ca*); and RV.I.115.1 where 'Earth, Air and Sky' (*dyávāpṛthiví antárikṣam*) are filled by the Solar Spirit of all that moves or is at rest' (*sūrya ātmā jágatas tasthūṣāś ca*). The King of

Kings is thus the progenitive Solar Spirit, who takes the forms of Agni, Vāyu and Āditya (ŚB.IX.3.1.3) in relation to the triple Dominion or Three Dominions which are so often spoken of as Dawn or Dawns, and are the Three Worlds of Earth, Air and Sky, the 'Three Earths' (*pṛthivīś tisrāḥ*) of which Savitṛ is the Mover (*invati*) in RV.IV.53.5, Savitṛ's 'Three bright realms' (*trīr . . . rocanāni*) that his, the Asura's (*asya . . . āsurasya*, cf. RV.III.53.1), three Hero-sons (*trāyo . . . vīrāḥ* = VII.33.7, *prajā aryāḥ* = I.105.5 *amí yé devāḥ*) govern in RV.III.56.7, 8.⁵⁶

The knowledge of the Three Worlds and their Rulers is the 'Triple Science' (*trayī vidyā*) of JUB.II.9.7. Of the logoi (*vyāhṛtayah*, JUB.I.23.6 and II.9.3; SA.I.5.6; MU.VI.6, etc.) in which it is expressed, the briefest form is that of the well-known formula *bhur bhuvas suvah*. It is precisely this knowledge of the relations of the Three World-Overlords to their Domains that fits the Purohita for his office (AB.VIII.27); the Vasiṣṭhas, its Comprehensors (RV.VII.33.7) are the 'well indoctrinated' (*suśrivānsah*) Brāhmaṇas (JB.II.241), and Vasiṣṭhas (i.e. Agni, Bṛhaspati) having been Indra's Purohita in the beginning, one can say with TS.III.5.2.1 'it is, therefore, a Vasiṣṭha that should be made the *brahmā*', and JUB.III.15.1 that 'The *brahma* pertains to Vasiṣṭha . . . he is the *brahmā* who is a comprehensor thereof; and assuredly, to have understood this doctrine of the Three World-Overlords fully would have been to have grasped the whole theory of government. Furthermore, the King who has for a Purohita to guard his kingdom (as its Pastor, *rāṣṭragopā*)⁵⁷ a Brāhmaṇa possessed of this knowledge 'dies no more'⁵⁸ (*na punar mriyate*) but lives out his life to old age (AB.VIII.25),⁵⁹ also PB.XXIV.19.2, XXIII.12.3, XXII.12.2.

We have seen that the triple relation of the Lights to their Realms⁶⁰ is really the single relationship of the Light to the Cosmos, and since the Lights and their Realms, of which savitṛ is the Prime Mover, are spoken of as 'Three Skies' (*tisro divāḥ*) and 'Three Earths' (*pṛthivīś tisrah*, RV.IV.53.5) it is clear that the relationship of the Sacerdotium to the Regnum, or that of Man to Woman, or that of any Director to any Executive, can be more briefly expressed as that of Sky to Earth. Thus from one

point of view the Sky is feminine to the Sun, but from another the Sky is no less male to the Earth (Zeus to Gaia, Europa, Danae, etc.) and literally 'Lord and Master' of Earth,—Adhipati, Bhūpati, Kṣetrapati and Vāstoṣpati.⁶¹ Thus RV.V.63.3 (*divaspati pṛthivyā mitrāvaraṇā*, 'Ye, Mitrāvaraṇau, are (respectively) Lords and husbands of Sky and Earth' is as much as to say, 'Thou, Mitra, art Lord of Dyaus (=Varuna), and thou, Varuṇa (=Dyaus), art Lord of Earth.' It is in just the same way that while 'the Regnum is dependent upon (*anuniyuktam*) the Sacerdotium, the Commons are dependent on the Regnum' (AB.II.33 and Aristotle, *Metaphysics*) and that while the Sacerdotium is virile to the King and Commons (PB.II.8.2), the King, whose *vīrya* is analogous to Indra's, and is only properly to be regarded as a Dominion (*rāṣṭra*) insofar as he generates (*prajāyate*, ŚB.IX.4.1.5; cf. J.V.279 where because the King has no son the people complain that the Kingdom will utterly perish), is preeminently virile to the Realm; so that while the virility (*vīrya*) pertains more eminently to the *brahma*, both *brahma* and *kṣatra* are 'virilities' (ŚB.I.3.5.4–5). In the same way, too, the delegation of the sceptre, the *vajra*, as the token of dominion (ŚB.XIII.4.4.1), by the Priest to the King, though it strengthens him with respect to his enemies, weakens him with respect to the Sacerdotium, just as when the King himself delegates authority to others they become his vassals (RV.IV.4.15). The people are subject to the King, but not so the Brāhmaṇas, 'whose King is Soma' (ŚB.V.4.2.3); the people are 'food' for the King, but the King is 'food' for the Brāhmaṇa (Kauṣ Up.II.9); while there is another for whom the Regnum and the Sacerdotium both are 'food' (KU.II.25). There is one, Bhaga (=Āditya), 'to whom even the King says: "Apportion me a portion"' (AV.III.16.2). The Regnum is not its own principle, but is controlled by another, the Eternal Law, the Truth (*dharma, satyam*), the 'Kingship of the Kingship' (*kṣatrasya kṣatram*, BU.I.4.14). This, incidentally, provides the sanction for the well-known Cambodian doctrine of the Dharmarāja, as the real and persistent Royalty, to be clearly distinguished from the King's own temporal personality: cf. 'Le roi est mort, vive

le roi.' Even a righteous emperor is not without an over-lord; and 'Who is this King above the King? The Eternal Law' (*ko pana . . . rāñī . . . rājā? dhammo*, A.I.109), a Law that equally rules the Sage (*anudhammadārī na hīyati saccaparakkamo muni*, A.I.149), and as is the King to his vassals, so are these to their own followers, so is the patron to the artist and the man to the wife, each in turn a servant and a master in a feudal hierarchy stemming from the King of Kings. That the King is feminine to the Priest but male to his own Realm is thus nothing strange, but only a special case of Order. In any Hierarchy, the individual is necessarily related in one way to what is above him, and in another to his own domain.

Among the syzygies to which we have referred it is, then, that of Sky and Earth (*dyāvāprthivī*), the universal parents upon whose harmonious cooperation the prosperity and the fertility of the Universe depend, that is chiefly taken to be the norm and archetype of all marriage, so that in the marriage rite the man addresses the woman with the words: 'I am He, thou art She, I am the Harmony, thou the Words; I am Sky, thou art Earth.'⁶² Let us twain here become one; let us bring forth offspring' (*amo 'hamasmi sā tvam, sāmā 'hamasmi rk tvam, dyauraham prthivī tvam; tāviha sam bhavāva prajām ā janayāvahai*, AV.XIV.2.71).⁶³ In the same way in China, Sky and Earth represent respectively the male, light and active, and female, dark and passive principles, *yang* and *yin*, and it is from this existence of the macrocosmic male and female principles that the distinction of husband and wife is derived; from the marriage of Sky and Earth 'transformation in all its various forms abundantly proceeds' (*I Ching*, Appendix, III.43.45 and VI.31). In the same *I Ching*, Appendix I (as cited by Fung Yu-lan, *History of Chinese Philosophy*, I.p.387) we find 'Because of their union, Heaven (Sky) and Earth, though separate, have their common work, just as man and woman, though separate, have a common will,' corresponding very closely to RV.III.54.6 where Sky and Earth are *nānā . . . samānena kratunā samvidāne*.⁶⁴

We are now at last in a better position to understand the mutual choice or wooing (*varāṇa*) of one another by the

High-Priest and the King, and to understand the marriage formula with which the alliance of their 'houses' is effected in AB.VIII.27. The Purohita has been chosen as Guardian, or rather Pastor, of the Realm (*rāstragopā*), and now addressed the King with the following *mantram*, wherewith he takes him to wife: 'I am That (*ama*, 'He') thou art This (*sa*');⁶⁵ thou art This, I am That, I am Sky, thou art Earth. I am the Harmony (*sāman*), thou the Words (*rc*).⁶⁶ Let us twain here unite our houses (*samvahāvahai purāṇi*).⁶⁷ Thou art the body, protect thou my body from this Great Dread' (*asmān mahābhayāt . . . tanvam me pāhi. . . tanvah̄ soma gopāḥ*, RV.VIII.48.9).⁶⁸

That these words, to which Sāyaṇa refers as the *rājñāḥ purohitavarāṇa-mantram*,⁶⁹ could only have been spoken by the Purohita to the King may be said to have been proved by the already accumulated evidence of the masculinity of the Sacerdotium with respect to the Regnum. That *amo 'ham asmi* must have been spoken by the Priest is further confirmed by the fact that in CU.V.2.6 the would-be King addresses the Fire (the archetype of the Purohita) with the words *amo nāmā'si*, 'Thy name is "That" (or "He"),' cf.AV.XIV.2.71 'Sā is This (Earth), *ama* is Agni.' That it is the Purohita that utters the words 'I am That (or He)' is stated explicitly by Sāyaṇa (AB.VIII.27, Commentary, *Bib.Ind.*, 1896, IV.288, line 8, *purohita aham amah*). Sāyaṇa also makes it clear that the whole of the rest of this section, beginning *yā oṣadhi . . .*, is likewise spoken by the Purohita, who thus consecrates the seat given to him by the King and at the same time blesses the realm. The Purohita is the 'man' and the King the 'woman'. Observe that it is to the King that the words 'Bear thou rule' (*tvam vi rāja*) are addressed in AV.III.4.1, and that it is with reference to a wife that the words 'let her bear rule' (*vi rājatu*) are spoken in AV.II.36.3.⁷⁰

The essential purpose of the Divine Marriage, in which the Priest and King are the representatives of Sky and Earth, is apotropaic of Death, and especially Famine (cf.BU.I.2.1, *aśanāyā hi mrtyuh*).⁷¹ The words of the text reflect the refrain *raksatām prthivī no abhvāt* of RV.I.185, addressed to Sky and Earth, Day and Night. It is by means of the Divine Marriage

le roi.' Even a righteous emperor is not without an over-lord; and 'Who is this King above the King? The Eternal Law' (*ko pama . . . rājī . . . rāja? dhammo*, A.I.109), a Law that equally rules the Sage (*anudhammadacāri na hīyati saccaparakkamo muni*, A.I.149), and as is the King to his vassals, so are these to their own followers, so is the patron to the artist and the man to the wife, each in turn a servant and a master in a feudal hierarchy stemming from the King of Kings. That the King is feminine to the Priest but male to his own Realm is thus nothing strange, but only a special case of Order. In any Hierarchy, the individual is necessarily related in one way to what is above him, and in another to his own domain.

Among the syzygies to which we have referred it is, then, that of Sky and Earth (*dyāvāprthivī*), the universal parents upon whose harmonious cooperation the prosperity and the fertility of the Universe depend, that is chiefly taken to be the norm and archetype of all marriage, so that in the marriage rite the man addresses the woman with the words: 'I am He, thou art She, I am the Harmony, thou the Words; I am Sky, thou art Earth.'⁶² Let us twain here become one; let us bring forth offspring' (*amo 'ham asmi sā tvam, sāmā 'ham asmi ṛk tvam, dyauraham prthivī tvam; tāviha sam bhavāva prajām ā janayāvahai*, AV.XIV.2.71).⁶³ In the same way in China, Sky and Earth represent respectively the male, light and active, and female, dark and passive principles, *yang* and *yin*, and it is from this existence of the macrocosmic male and female principles that the distinction of husband and wife is derived; from the marriage of Sky and Earth 'transformation in all its various forms abundantly proceeds' (*I Ching*, Appendix, III.43.45 and VI.31). In the same *I Ching*, Appendix I (as cited by Fung Yu-lan, *History of Chinese Philosophy*, I.p.387) we find 'Because of their union, Heaven (Sky) and Earth, though separate, have their common work, just as man and woman, though separate, have a common will,' corresponding very closely to RV.III.54.6 where Sky and Earth are *nānā . . . samānena kratunā samvidāne*.⁶⁴

We are now at last in a better position to understand the mutual choice or wooing (*varana*) of one another by the

High-Priest and the King, and to understand the marriage formula with which the alliance of their 'houses' is effected in AB.VIII.27. The Purohita has been chosen as Guardian, or rather Pastor, of the Realm (*rāṣṭragopā*), and now addressed the King with the following *mantram*, wherewith he takes him to wife: 'I am That (*ama*, 'He') thou art This (*sa*');⁶⁵ thou art This, I am That, I am Sky, thou art Earth. I am the Harmony (*sāman*), thou the Words (*rc*).⁶⁶ Let us twain here unite our houses (*samvahāvahai purāṇi*).⁶⁷ Thou art the body, protect thou my body from this Great Dread' (*asmān mahābhayaṭ . . . tanvam me pāhi . . . tanvah soma gopāḥ*, RV.VIII.48.9).⁶⁸

That these words, to which Sāyaṇa refers as the *rājñāh purohitavarana-mantram*,⁶⁹ could only have been spoken by the Purohita to the King may be said to have been proved by the already accumulated evidence of the masculinity of the Sacerdotium with respect to the Regnum. That *amo 'ham asmi* must have been spoken by the Priest is further confirmed by the fact that in CU.V.2.6 the would-be King addresses the Fire (the archetype of the Purohita) with the words *amo nāmā'si*, 'Thy name is "That" (or "He")', cf.AV.XIV.2.71 'Sā is This (Earth), *ama* is Agni.' That it is the Purohita that utters the words 'I am That (or He)' is stated explicitly by Sāyaṇa (AB.VIII.27, Commentary, *Bib.Ind.*, 1896, IV.288, line 8, *purohita aham amah*). Sāyaṇa also makes it clear that the whole of the rest of this section, beginning *yā oṣadhi . . .*, is likewise spoken by the Purohita, who thus consecrates the seat given to him by the King and at the same time blesses the realm. The Purohita is the 'man' and the King the 'woman'. Observe that it is to the King that the words 'Bear thou rule' (*tvam vi rāja*) are addressed in AV.III.4.1, and that it is with reference to a wife that the words 'let her bear rule' (*vi rājatu*) are spoken in AV.II.36.3.⁷⁰

The essential purpose of the Divine Marriage, in which the Priest and King are the representatives of Sky and Earth, is apotropaic of Death, and especially Famine (cf.BU.I.2.1, *āśanāyā hi mr̄tyuh*).⁷¹ The words of the text reflect the refrain *raksatām prthivī no abhvāt* of RV.I.185, addressed to Sky and Earth, Day and Night. It is by means of the Divine Marriage

and the Sacrifice that Death is averted from the kingdom, as we saw in note 57 citing JB.II.419. The marriage is an insurance against the Privation (*abhva*) of RV.I.185, 'the Great Dread, the uplifted bolt' (*mahadbhayam vajram udyatam*) of KU.VI.2, the uplifted bolt (the millstone), dreaded by Sky and Earth, SB. III.9.4.18, the Great Fear of BG.II.40, the 'fear' (*bhayam*) of Taitt.Up.II.7, cf. Sn.1033 'the Great Dread, the woe of this world' (*dukkham assa mahabbhayam*): just as Sky and Earth (where they have been reconciled) are not afraid, nor are hurt, so the *brahma* and the *kṣatra* are not afraid nor are hurt, and one says: 'Be not afraid, O thou breath-of-my-life' (AV.II.15.I.4). The congress of Mitrāvaraṇau, Dyāvāprthivī, *brahma-kṣatru* is an aversion of the 'wrath' (*manyu*) of Varuṇa, or rather a conversion by which he is made a Friend (Mitra).⁷²

The primary expression of the 'wrath' is in drought, the precursor of famine. Prior to the marital reunion of Sky and Earth 'there was no rain, no warmth, the Five Folk were at variance' (*na samajānata*, AB.IV.27); it is a consequence of the marriage of the Purohita and the King that the people are unanimous (*viśah samjānate*, AB.VIII. 27). So when the separation of Sky and Earth, the act of 'creation' essential to life but also involving death, had first been effected, 'The Gods all wailed, and called upon the Aśvins to 'Reunite them' (*pūnar āvahatāt*, RV.X.24.5): so 'the Gods led them together (*samanayan*, as the Queen is 'led' in the Aśvamedha), and coming together, they performed this Divine Marriage' (*samyantāv etam devavivāham vyavahetām*, AB.IV.27) and as in VS.II.16 'Consent ye together (*saṃjānathām*), Sky and Earth; aid ye us with rain.'

For if Varuṇa is, in himself, a god of drought and privation (see note 22), on the other hand Mitrāvaraṇau jointly are typically 'rain-gods', as in RV.V.63, 68, and 69; and if their cosmic and earthly equivalents, Sky and Earth, Priest and King, are likewise jointly rain-givers, this too depends upon the marital association and cooperation of the contrasted principles: the King, in other words, is directly responsible for the fertility of the land; the fall of rain in due season depends upon his righteousness or default.

SB.I.8.3.12 adds to VS.II.16 cited above, 'for when Sky and Earth consent (or 'know' one another), then indeed it rains,' explaining that Mitrāvaraṇau as *prāṇāpānau* are the same as that Vāyu, the Gale, 'who is the ruler in the rain' (*yó varṣasyeṣṭe*): similarly AA.III.1.2 where 'the conjunction (*samdhī*) of Sky and Earth is rain, Parjanya the conjoiner' (*samdhātr*); cf.RV.VII.101.6 where Parjanya, identified with the solar Ātman, is the inseminator of the (three) 'Everlasting-Dawns' (*retodhā . . . śāśvatīnām*), and Taitt. Up.I.3.2 where Vāyu is the conjoiner (*samdhā*) of Sky and Earth; just as the Priest, by means of the sacrificial ritual 'conjoins' (*samdadhāti*) Earth, Vāyu, and Āditya with Earth, Air, and Sky (ŚA.I.5), which is 'a coupling of three with three for progeny' (*tisrás trivṛdbhir mithunāḥ prājātyai*, TB.I.2.1.8). With reference to all these marriages, and their reflection here (*tasmād idānim puruṣasya śarīraṇi pratिसम्हितानि*, JUB.III.4.6; *pravasiyān sam vivāham āpnoti ya evām veda*, PB.VII.10.4), one may well say 'What God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.'

Thus, while 'there was no rain' so long as Sky and Earth were estranged, the text goes on to say that, when the marriage has been made (cf. ŚA.VII.3), 'they enliven (*jīnvanti*) one another; with the smoke (of the Sacrifice) this world enlivens that (world), with rain that (world) enlivens this' (AB.IV.27); the seminal union is effected with RV.I.159, wherewith the Priest fertilizes Sky and Earth (*dyāvāprthivyo rasam dadhati*, cf. *rasa* in RV.I.105.2) and 'it is upon these two, thus saturated (*rasavatyāḥ*) that these children live (*upajīvanti*) as means of subsistence' (*upajīvaniye*, ŚB.IV.3.2.12).⁷³ So in TS.III.5.2.1 "Quicken the Sky", he says; verily, to these worlds he announces the Sacrifice . . . verily he wins rain.' Similarly in PB.VII.10.3; and in JB.I.145 where because of the separation of Sky and Earth 'Gods and men hungered'⁷⁴ (*āśanāyan*): for the Gods live by what is given hence, and men by what is given thence.⁷⁵ . . . "Let us be wedded" (*vivahāvahā*), they said. . . Yonder world thence gave the Dawn to this world as a marriage gift, and this world hence the Smoke⁷⁶ (of the morning Sacrifice); yonder world thence gave the Rain to this

and the Sacrifice that Death is averted from the kingdom, as we saw in note 57 citing JB.II.419. The marriage is an insurance against the Privation (*abhva*) of RV.I.185, 'the Great Dread, the uplifted bolt' (*mahadbhayam vajram udyatam*) of KU.VI.2, the uplifted bolt (the millstone), dreaded by Sky and Earth, SB.III.9.4.18, the Great Fear of BG.II.40, the 'fear' (*bhayam*) of Taitt.Up.II.7, cf.Sn.1033 'the Great Dread, the woe of this world' (*dukkham assa mahabbhayam*): just as Sky and Earth (where they have been reconciled) are not afraid, nor are hurt, so the *brahma* and the *kṣatra* are not afraid nor are hurt, and one says: 'Be not afraid, O thou breath-of-my-life' (AV.II.15.I.4). The congress of Mitrāvaraṇau, Dyāvāpr̥thivī, *brahma-kṣatru* is an aversion of the 'wrath' (*manyu*) of Varuṇa, or rather a conversion by which he is made a Friend (Mitra).⁷²

The primary expression of the 'wrath' is in drought, the precursor of famine. Prior to the marital reunion of Sky and Earth 'there was no rain, no warmth, the Five Folk were at variance' (*na samajānata*, AB.IV.27); it is a consequence of the marriage of the Purohita and the King that the people are unanimous (*viśah samjānate*, AB.VIII. 27). So when the separation of Sky and Earth, the act of 'creation' essential to life but also involving death, had first been effected, 'The Gods all wailed, and called upon the Aśvins to 'Reunite them' (*pūnar āvahatāt*, RV.X.24.5): so 'the Gods led them together (*samanayan*, as the Queen is 'led' in the Aśvamedha), and coming together, they performed this Divine Marriage' (*samyantāv etam devavivāham vyavahetām*, AB.IV.27) and as in VS.II.16 'Consent ye together (*samjānathām*), Sky and Earth; aid ye us with rain.'

For if Varuṇa is, in himself, a god of drought and privation (see note 22), on the other hand Mitrāvaraṇau jointly are typically 'rain-gods', as in RV.V.63, 68, and 69; and if their cosmic and earthly equivalents, Sky and Earth, Priest and King, are likewise jointly rain-givers, this too depends upon the marital association and cooperation of the contrasted principles: the King, in other words, is directly responsible for the fertility of the land; the fall of rain in due season depends upon his righteousness or default.

SB.I.8.3.12 adds to VS.II.16 cited above, 'for when Sky and Earth consent (or 'know' one another), then indeed it rains,' explaining that Mitrāvaraṇau as *prāṇāpānau* are the same as that Vāyu, the Gale, 'who is the ruler in the rain' (*yō varṣasyeṣṭe*): similarly AA.III.1.2 where 'the conjunction (*samdhī*) of Sky and Earth is rain, Parjanya the conjoiner' (*samdhātṛ*); cf.RV.VII.101.6 where Parjanya, identified with the solar Ātman, is the inseminator of the (three) 'Everlasting-Dawns' (*retodhā . . . śāśvatīnām*), and Taitt. Up.I.3.2 where Vāyu is the conjoiner (*samdhā*) of Sky and Earth; just as the Priest, by means of the sacrificial ritual 'conjoins' (*samdadhāti*) Earth, Vāyu, and Āditya with Earth, Air, and Sky (ŚA.I.5), which is 'a coupling of three with three for progeny' (*tisrás trivṛdbhir mithunāḥ prājātyai*, TB.I.2.1.8). With reference to all these marriages, and their reflection here (*tasmād idānīm puruṣasya śarīrāṇi pratisamhitāni*, JUB.III.4.6; *pravasiyān sam vivāham āpnoti ya evām veda*, PB.VII.10.4), one may well say 'What God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.'

Thus, while 'there was no rain' so long as Sky and Earth were estranged, the text goes on to say that, when the marriage has been made (cf.ŚA.VII.3), 'they enliven (*jinvanti*) one another; with the smoke (of the Sacrifice) this world enlivens that (world), with rain that (world) enlivens this' (AB.IV.27); the seminal union is effected with RV.I.159, wherewith the Priest fertilizes Sky and Earth (*dyāvāpr̥thivyo rasām dadhati*, cf. *rasa* in RV.I.105.2) and 'it is upon these two, thus saturated (*rasavatyāḥ*) that these children live (*upajīvanti*) as means of subsistence' (*upajīvanīye*, SB.IV.3.2.12).⁷³ So in TS.III.5.2.1 "Quicken the Sky", he says; verily, to these worlds he announces the Sacrifice . . . verily he wins rain.' Similarly in PB.VII.10.3; and in JB.I.145 where because of the separation of Sky and Earth 'Gods and men hungered'⁷⁴ (*āśanāyan*): for the Gods live by what is given hence, and men by what is given thence.⁷⁵ . . . "Let us be wedded" (*vivahāvahai*), they said. . . Yonder world thence gave the Dawn to this world as a marriage gift, and this world hence the Smoke⁷⁶ (of the morning Sacrifice); yonder world thence gave the Rain to this

world as a marriage gift, and this world hence the Divine Service (*devayajanam*, the Sacrifice to the Gods) to that world.' So when it rains hard all day night men say: 'Earth and Sky have united' (*samadhātām*, AA.III.1.2).

We can understand better now the traditional and worldwide doctrine that the very life and fertility of the realm depend upon the King,⁷⁷ to whom accordingly it is said: 'For our bread (*ūrjē*) art thou, for rain unto us art thou, for our paternity of offspring (*prajānām . . . ādhipatyāya; pati* here as in 'Prajāpati'), . . . for all this have we aspersed (*abhyāśicāmahi*) thee' (SB.IX.3.3.11 and SB.V.2.1.2 *iyam te rāt . . .*). For unless the King fulfills his primary function as Patron of the Sacrifice (*yajamāna*) the circulation of the 'Shower of Wealth (*vásor dhārā*)', the limitless, inexhaustible food of the gods' that falls from the Sky as Rain and is returned from the Earth to the Sky in the smoke of the burnt-offering will be interrupted (SB.IX.3.3.15, 16):⁷⁸ that man's offerings are transmitted to the gods in the smoke of the Sacrifice is, of course, implied in the fact that Agni is the missal-priest (RV.VII.10.3 and *passim*); it is indeed in the same way that the spirit of the deceased, whose body is offered up on the funeral pyre, ascends thence.

It is, then, only when the Priest and the King, the human representatives of Sky and Earth, God and his Kingdom, are 'united in the performance of the rite' (*savrate*, etc.), only when 'Thy will is done on Earth as it is in Heaven' (implying a mimesis of the Heavenly 'forms', cf.AB.VI.27), that there is both a giving and a taking, a taking and a giving, not indeed an equality but a true reciprocity. Peace and prosperity, and fulness of life in every sense of the words, are the fruit of the 'marriage' of the Temporal Power to the Spiritual Authority, just as they must be of the marriage of the 'woman' to the 'man' on whatever level of reference. For 'Verily, when a mating is effected, then each achieves the other's desire' (CU.I.1.6); and in the case of the 'divine mating' of the Sacerdotium and the Regnum, whether in the outer realm or within you, the desires of the two partners are for 'good' here and hereafter. The needs of the soul and the body are to be satisfied *together*.

But, if the King cooperating with and assimilated to the higher power is thus the Father of his people, it is none the less true that satanic and deadly possibilities inhere in the Temporal Power: when the Regnum pursues its own devices, when the feminine half of the Administration asserts its independence, when Might presumes to rule without respect for Right, when the 'woman' demands her 'rights', then these lethal possibilities are realized; the King and the Kingdom, the family and the house, alike are destroyed and disorder (*anṛta*) prevails. It was by an assertion of his independence and a claim to 'equal rights' that Lucifer (to be distinguished from the Lux, as the solar disc is distinguished from the 'Person in the Sun') fell headlong from Heaven and became Satan, 'the Enemy': and by a like paranoia that Indra, 'when maddened by pride in his own heroic-power' (*svena vīryeṇa darpitah*)⁷⁹ became their oppressor (*devān bādhitum ārebhe*), and could only be reawakened (*ātmānam buddhvā*, i.e. knew himself, cf. Kauṣ Up.IV.20) from his stupor by the Spiritual-Power, by Saptagu-Bṛhaspati (BD.VII.54f., RV.X.47). We have also the case of King Soma, who oppressed Bṛhaspati but was afterwards reconciled to him (SB.IV.1.2.4), and that of Nahuśa, who in the Epic replaces Indra for a time but is ruined by his arrogance, cf. SB.V.5.1.2 where if the King should be 'intoxicated' (*úd vā ha mādyet*) by his ritual exaltation, 'Let him fall down headlong' (*prá vā patet*). A self-assertion on the part of the Regnum is at the same time destructive and suicidal.⁸⁰

In a traditional society the oppressor is excommunicated and legally deposed; this may be followed by a submission and apokatastasis, as in Indra's case and as foreseen in Islam for Iblis, or by the installation of a more regular successor in whom the Kingship is reborn. In an anti-traditional society, when the oppressor has been removed by a popular revolution, those who have been oppressed propose to govern in their own interests, and become oppressor in their turn. The majority oppresses the minority. The rise of a plutocracy undermines what is still in name a majority rule. The inefficiency and corruption of the plutocracy prepares the way for the seizure of

power by a single proletarian who becomes a Dictator, or what is called in more technical terms a Tyrant, who no longer pays even lip-service to any power above his own, and even if he has 'good intentions' is nevertheless 'unprincipled.' This caricature of monarchy in turn prepares the way for a state of disorder (*anṛta*) such as may well be realised in the world in our own times. It is, indeed, already apparent that 'what we call our civilisation is but a murderous machine with no conscience and no ideals' (G. La Piana in *Harvard Divinity School Bulletin*, XXXVII.27). Such is the final consequence of the divorce of the Temporal Power from the Spiritual Authority, Might from Right, Action from Contemplation.

We have so far discussed only the cosmic (*adhi-daivatam*) and political (*adhirājyam*) aspects of the science of government and with reference to the individual as a subject. But this doctrine has also a self-referent (*adhyātmam*) application; the question is not only one of a universal and a national or civic order, but also one of an internal economy. In the last analysis the man himself is the 'City of God' (AV.X.2.30, BU.II.5.18)⁸¹ and it can as well be said of him as of any other city that 'The city can never otherwise be happy unless it is drawn by those painters who copy a divine original' (Plato, *Rep.*, 500E, cf. KU.V.1). Here also, there must exist a government in which the factors of disorder must be ruled by a principle of order, if the goals of well-being in this world and the other are to be reached. That man has two selves is a universal doctrine; these are respectively natural and supernatural, the one outer and active, the subject of passions, the other inner, contemplative and serene. The problem of the internal economy by which the man's ends (*puruṣārtha*) can all be attained is one of the relationship of the psycho-physical Ego to the spiritual Person, the Outer King to the Priest within you:⁸² for as Plato so often puts it, the welfare of 'the entire soul and body' depends upon the unanimity of the mortal and immortal selves within you as to which shall rule.⁸³ That the Purohita is the instigator and the King the agent, reflects the individual constitution in which the Inner Person is the *kārayitṛ* and the elemental self (the Outer Man) the *kartr*

(MU.III.3, Kaus. Up.III.8, BG.XVIII.16).

These two selves of the man, who is *dvīyatman* (virtually at birth and actually by a rebirth), are respectively human, born of woman, and divine, born of the sacrificial fire (JB.I.17, see JAOS 19.2, p.116; AB.III.19 *yajñād devayonyai prajanayati*, etc.).⁸⁴ The two selves correspond to (are the trace of) those of Mitrāvaraṇau, Sacerdotium and Regnum (*tāv ātmanah*, SB.IV.I.4.1), and to the two natures of the Brahma, respectively mortal, concrete and vocal, and immortal, discrete and silent, etc. (BU.II.3.1, MU.VI.3.15, 22, 36), whereby he is *dvaitibhāva* ('of one essence and two natures', MU.VII.11.8). That the inner and the outer man are the trace of the two natures, Sacerdotal and Royal, *in divinis* can be shown as follows: it is as the Truth or Reality (*satya*) and as Untruth or Unreality (*anṛta*) that Brahma enters into these worlds nominally (*nāmnā*) and phenomenally (*rūpenā*, SB.XI.2.3–6),⁸⁵ in other words both as Affirmation (*om*) and as Negation (*na*, AA.II.3.6); the distinction of *satya* from *anṛta* is that of the Devas from the Asuras (SB.III.9.4.1, cf.IX.5.1.12), that of *om* from *na* is that of the Devas from others, whether men or Asuras (AB.I.16 and II.2), as, for example in RV.I.164.19, cf.BG.II.61 and Sn.724f.; the distinction of *satya* from *anṛta* is also precisely that of the temporarily superhuman (deified) and priestly person of the initiated Sacrificer from the secular So-and-so to which he returns when the sacred operation is relinquished (SB.I.9.3.23 with VS.I.5 and II.28, cf.AB.VII.24 where the King is similarly desecrated at the conclusion of the rite where he calls upon the Trinity to witness that now once more 'I am who I am'); and this is the distinction between the two selves of the Sacrificer, one the natural man and the other the second and divine Self to which he is sacrificially reborn (JB.I.17, AB.III.19, etc.); while finally, just as it is by a marriage of Mitra and Varuṇa, the Deva and the Asura, *brahma* and *kṣatra*, that the Kingdom is maintained, so it is by a marriage of Truth (*satya*) to Untruth (*anṛta*) that man himself is propagated and increased (*tayor mithunāt prajāyate*

bhūyān bhavati, AA.II.3.6, MU.VII.11.8). That the relationship is thought of as that of Outer King and Inner Sage is also clear from the actual wording of the texts; e.g. RV.X.31.2 where ‘one should speak according to one’s own Counsel, and by the Intellect handle the more glorious Power’ (*svena kratunā sām vadeta śreyānsām dakṣām manasā jagrbhyāt*) and it is obvious that *kratu* and *manas* are the interior *brahma* and the *sāmvadana* and *dakṣa* the external *kṣatra* (we say ‘handle’ to suggest ‘handfasting’, because the wording could also be applied to the ‘taking’ or ‘marriage’ of *kratu* to *vāc*, *manas* to *dakṣa*, contemplation to action), and CU.VII.25.2 where the application of the political terms *svarāj* and *anyarāj* is to the man himself.

Of the two selves, one is the psycho-physical individuality (*bhūtātman*, *śarīra ātman*, *dehika ātman*, *jīvātman*, etc.), this man So-and-so, the other the spiritual Person (*paramātman*, *prajñātman*, *jñānātman*, *aśarīra ātman*, *sarvabhūtānām ātman*, *vaiśvānara ātman*, *ātmā sarvāntarah*, *antarātman*, *mahātman*, etc.), the solar Ātman of RV.I.115.1 and related texts, the pneumatic Daimon (*ātmanvat yakṣa*) of AV.X.2.32 and X.8.43, the ‘contemplative, uninverted, ever-youthful Spirit, knowing whom none is afraid of Death’ of AV.X.8.44: in Buddhism, the one the Great or Fair (*mahattā*, *kalyāṇattā*), the other the petty or foul self (*appatuma*, *pāpattā*), A.I.149, 249. The former is ‘this self’, the latter ‘that’, ‘yonder’, or ‘the other’ self (AA.II.3.7, *ayam ātmā... asāv ātmā*; AA.II.5 and PB.V.1.4 *itara ātmā*; SB.I.8.3.17 and 19 *itara ātmā*, and SB.IV.3.4.5 *anyam ātmānam*; D.I.34 *añño attā*). That ‘Self of (this mortal) self (*ātmano ’tmā*) is called its Immortal Guide’ (*netā amṛtah*, MU.VI.7, cf. RV.V.50.1); this self is possible, ‘its immortal Self (*amṛto ’syā ’tmā*) as is the drop of water on the lotus leaf’ (MU.III.2), i.e. unattached, imperturbable.

‘That art thou’ (*tat tvam asi*, CU.VI.8.6, etc.). In other words, this outer, active, feminine and mortal self of ours subsists more eminently in and as that inner, contemplative, masculine and immortal self of ours, to which it can and should be ‘reduced’,

i.e. ‘led back’ or ‘wedded’ (*nīta, upanīta*).⁸⁶ Our existence (*esse*, *Werden*) is contingent, our consciousness of essence (*essentia*, *Wesen*) is valid and indefeasible, *extempore*. But our awareness of our own essence is obscured by our conviction (*abhibhūtatva* as in MU.III.2) of being essentially, and not merely accidentally, ‘this man’, So-and-so, our fond belief ‘that “I” am the doer’ (BG. etc., *passim*). That other, Inner Man, the Self ‘that has never become anyone’ (KU.II.18, cf. Hermes, Asclepius II. 14b, *Deus . . . nec nasci potest, nec potuit*), meanwhile remains unknown and incredible to us so long as this outer man asserts its independence, so long as ‘thou knowest not thyself’ (Cant. I.8, *si ignoras te*): the stupified *bhūtātman* ‘fails to see the generous author of existence (*bhagavantam prabhūm—mahātmanam*), the (real) cause of actions (*kārayitdram*, cf. JUB.I.5.2, BU.I.6.3, John VIII. 28, etc.), within himself (*atmastham*, MU.III.2, cf. BG.XVIII.16). Thus to have forgotten what one is, ‘know oneself’ only as a ‘reasoning and mortal animal’ (Boethius, *De Consol.*, prose VI) is the greatest of all privations. The distinction is sharply drawn in Kaus. U.IV.20 (cf. CU.VIII.7 f.) where ‘so long as Indra knew not this spiritual-Self (*ātman*), so long the Asuras (the extroverted powers of the soul, cf. Śankara on BU.I.3.1) overcame him . . . When he knew it, then striking down and conquering the Asuras, he compassed the chieftaincy, autocracy and overlordship of all Gods and all beings, as may he likewise do who is a Comprehensor thereof.’⁸⁷

To ‘want’ and to ‘will’ are incompatible, the one implies a privation, the other implies an abundance: the Spirit is *wissing*, but the flesh is *weak* (Math.XXVI.41, S.Th.I.20. 1 ad1-distinction of passions from will); so that, as Rūmī says, ‘Whoso hath not surrendered will (self-will), no Will (free will) hath he’ (Ode XIII in Nicholson, *Shams-i-Tabrīz*). The mirage of an individual ‘liberty’ is the direct antithesis of the dogmatic *summum bonum*, which ‘highest good’ is indeed a liberty, but a liberty from oneself, not of oneself (the So-and-so), the freedom of those who can say with the Comprehensor ‘“I” do nothing’ (BG.V.8), with Christ that ‘I do nothing of myself’ (John VIII.28), with the Buddha that ‘I wander in the world, a

veritable Nemo' (Sn. 455–6) and are 'free as the Godhead in its non-existence' (Eckhart); 'Were it not for the shackle, who would say "I am I"?' (Rūmī, *Mathnawī*, I.2449).

To 'do as one likes' is by no means synonymous with 'liberty', but much rather a subjection to the 'ruling passions' (*indriyāni*) that one calls 'one's own'.⁸⁸ Those who are dominated by their own inclinations are 'free men only in name' (Plato, *Republic*, 431c). We are much more the creatures of our thoughts than their authors. The man who does not know, 'thinks' what he likes to think. Where we ought to like what we know, we actually 'know what we like', which is to say that liking and disliking are our masters, rather than our servants. There is accordingly no greater lesson to be learnt than *not* to think for oneself, but by the Self, *ātmatas* (CU.VII.26.1)-κατα λογον, (*kata logon*) analogically.

What, then, is meant by 'autonomy'? In the case of a King, to rule and not be ruled by the multitude of those who should be vassals and subjects; at home, to rule and not be ruled by one's family; and within you, to rule and not be ruled by one's desires. 'He whose pleasure is in the (spiritual) Self, whose love-sports are with the Self, he whose bride-groom is the Self, and whose bliss is in the Self (*ātmaratir ātma-krīḍa ātmamithuna ātmānandah*) becomes autonomous (*svarāj*) and a mover-at-will (*kāmacārin*) in every world: but those whose knowledge is heterogeneous become heteronomous (*anyarāj*), and do not become movers-at-will in any world' (CU.VII.25.2)⁸⁹: for 'Here on earth the children of men dwell in subjection to command, since whatever it be that they desire, whether a kingdom or field (i.e. whether it be a King or any other man), it is on that very thing that they base their life' (CU.VIII.1.5),⁹⁰ and 'Why then', as St. Augustine exclaims, 'should men venture to pride themselves on their freewill before they are set free? . . . For by whom a man is overcome, to him he is assigned in slavery' (*De Spir. et. Lit.*, 52, cf. MU.II.1–2).⁹¹ When this mystical union (*ātmamithunam*) of the inner and the outer man has been consummated, when the two fires that hated one another (TS.V.2.4.1–2) have been made one (*ekam*

bhavanti), in this affectionate, unanimous, and cooperative marriage, then it can be said that 'This self offers itself (*ātmānam samprayacchati*)⁹² to that Self, and that Self to this self. They unite with one another (*tāv anyonyam abhisambhavataḥ*). By this (earthly, feminine) form, he (the aforesaid Comprehensor of Indra as Overlord) unites with yonder world (*anenāha rūpenā-mum lokam abhisambhavati*)⁹³ and by the form with this world (AA.II.3.7); thus both worlds are gained for both selves, this world without and that other within you. We say 'within you' here, because it is at 'World's end' that Sky and Earth embrace (*samśliyataḥ*, JUB.I.5.5); that World's end, beyond which there is no more grieving, is at the core of our own being, and that is the Wayfarer's goal.⁹⁴

On the other hand, we are naturally at war with ourselves, and often not merely at war with 'what is divine in us,' but ignorant of it because of our 'notion that "I" am the doer' (*ahamkāra*), and so effectively 'one-selfed' (*ekātman*) and 'Self-less' (*anātman*), although potentially possessed of both natures (*dvyātman*), this born of the flesh and that born of the spirit. Our house is divided against itself. In this state of disorder 'Man's self (the Tyrant) has no other foe than the Self (the legitimate King having authority): that Self is a friend to the self that hath of itself vanquished itself, but a foe at war with one who lacks the Self (*añātmanah . . . śatruvat*, BG.VI.5,6).⁹⁵ Such a privation of Self, and corresponding mortality, was the original condition of both the Gods and Titans: Devas and Asuras were in the beginning equally *anātman*, and only Agni *amṛta* (SB.II.2.2.8, cf. XI.1.2.12 and XI.2.3.6), and 'As are men now (i.e. Self-less and mortal), so were the Gods in the beginning' (TS.VII.4.2.1.). The Gods, however, 'desired: "Let us do away with the privation (*avartim*), the evil (*pāpmānam*), death (*mṛtyum*)"' (TS.VII.4.2.1.), 'They longed for the world of heavenly-light' (JUB.I.15.1.), the Sun himself 'desired: "Let me, indeed, cut off all the evil, so that I may ascend to the world of heavenly light"'; he saw the sacrifice, grasped it and sacrificed therewith; thus he cut off all the evil and ascended to the world of heavenly light, and he it is that having put off the evil, now

shines' (JB.II.82): it was, in fact, only 'by qualification' (*arhanā*), 'by Agni's counsels' (*kratubhiḥ*), by the Sacerdotium (*brahmaṇā*) that the Gods attained their immortality (RV.X.63.4, VI.7.4, ŚB. XI.2.3.6). And as did the Sun, so may now the man who is a Comprehensor of the sacrifice, cut off all evil and rise above himself (JB.II.82): it is only in finding him-Self that a man is beatified, for 'All that is other than the Interior Self of All, other than thy Self, is an affliction' (*esa ta ātmā sarvāntarah ato anyadārtam*, BU.III.4.2).⁹⁶

The answer, then, to the question 'Who is worthy (*arhati*) to enter into union with (pass through the midst of) that Sun?' (JUB.I.6.1), i.e. 'to break out of the universe,'⁹⁷ is that he is able, he is an arhat, who can answer to the question 'who art thou?' 'I am thyself' (JUB.III.1.6, Kauṣ Up. I.2, etc.); it is to him that the welcome is addressed, 'Come in, O myself' (Rūmī *Mathnawī*, I.3063). But if he has not verified the words 'That art thou', if he does not know who he is, but speaks of himself by his own or a family name, he is driven or dragged away from the Door and excluded from the Marriage (JUB.III.14.2=JB. I.18, Rūmī, I.3057, Cant. I.8, Math. VII.21, 23, XXV.10, Rev. XIX.9, etc.). 'Woe unto him who departs from this world, not having known that Imperishable' (BU.III.8.10).

Thus the first and last of all man's needs is to 'know himself' (*ut sciat seipsum*, Avencebrol, *Fons Vitae*, I.2): the 'science of the Self' (*ātmavidyā*) is the final term of all doctrine (CU.IV.14.1, Śvet. Up. I.16, etc.). The ancient and timeless oracle, 'Know thyself' (*γνῶθι σεαυτόν*) *gnōthi seauton*, reechoes throughout the Philosophia Perennis.⁹⁸ The doctrine of the Self is thus appropriately introduced by such questions as: 'Which is the Self?' (*katarah sa ātmā*, AA.II.6, *katamā ātmā*, BU.IV.3.7, MU.II.1), 'Who is our "Self", what is "Brahma"?' (*ko na āmā, kim brahma*, CU.V.11.1), and 'In whom, when I go forth hence, shall I be going forth?' (*kasminn aham utkrānta utkrānto bhavisyāmi*, Praśna U.VI.3), i.e. When I 'give up the ghost' (Sanctus Spiritus), shall I be in that immortal Spirit, or, in the words of Blake, 'seiz'd and giv'n into the hands of my own selfhood?' What the answer to this last question shall be depends

upon the degree of our Self-knowledge now: 'Whoever departs from this world without having found the Spirit, there is no freedom for him' (CU.VIII.1.6), but 'The Comprehensor of the common Person of all, the Comprehensor of the logos "That is my Self", *he* when he goes forth falls in with the incorporeal Self, and leaves behind him the other and corporeal self' (*sarvesām bhūtānām āntarah puruṣah sa ma ātmeti, vidyāl sa utkrāmann evaitam aśārīram prajñātmanām abhisampadyate vijahāti-taram daihikam*, ŚA.VIII.7); 'there can be no doubting for him who is assured of this, that "this Self of mine in the heart, is Brahma; coessential with him am I (*tam . . . abhisambhavitāsmi*) when I go forth hence"' (CU.III.14.4); 'Who knoweth Him, knoweth himself, and is not afraid to die' (AV.X.8.44). Thus the dust returns to earth and the spirit to him who gave it (Eccl. XII.7). We need only add that these doctrines of man's two selves and of their composure (*samādhi, samādhī*) are as much Buddhist as Brahmanical, and as much Platonic and Christian as either of these.

The 'composure' of the *yogin* in whom the habit of *samādhi* persists is in fact the same as his 'self-possession,' the possession of and by one's Self in that deathlike 'sleep' that is the entelechy of the beatific conjugation of the conjoint principles, Indra and Indrāṇī, described in ŚB.X.5.2. 11–17 in explanation of the notions 'one and many, far and near': 'So let the Comprehensor "sleep" (*tāsmād evamvit svap्यते*): He who with love leadeth forth (*pranayati*, cf. MU.VI.7 *khalv ātmano atmā netā amṛtākhyah: √ nī*, "to lead, control, marry") all his children, He is verily the Breath (*prāṇāḥ*, i.e. Ātman, Vāyu, Prajāpati, Sūrya, Agni, Brahma, and here in particular Mr̄tyu) and these breaths or lives (*prāṇāḥ*, i.e. sense-powers) are his own 'subjects' (*svāḥ*, cf. VS. XII. 82, BU.IV.4.37, etc.), and when one sleeps (*svāpiti*), then these breaths, his subjects, go in unto him (*enam . . . ápiyanti*, cf. JUB.I.15.8 *prāṇam apyeti . . . sarvam prāṇam abhisameti*); this 'sleep' (*svapna*) is verily 'coming into one's own' (*svāpyaya = sva-api-aya*, cf. CU.VI.7.8 *svam apīta*), as it is expressed metaphysically (*ity ácakṣate parókṣam*) . . . Thus it is that HeSAP, JNU not merely 'One' (*ékaḥ*) but also "Several" (*ékaḥ*)—'as that is

one in the whole, and *many* in its parts—One absolutely, and *many accidentally*' (St. Thomas Aquinas, *Sum. Theol.*, I. 11.1 ad 2)—and thus both *akala* and *kala* (MU.VI.15). Now just as in English 'coming into' is 'taking possession of', so here there is play on the words *api* (*api-i*) 'to go in unto' and *āp* 'to take possession of', suggested by the likeness of *svāpyaya* to *svāpi* (whether *su-āpi*—'loyal intimate or ally', or *sva-āpi*, 'own intimate or ally') in AB.III.16 'the Maruts, those good allies, are the breaths' (*prāṇā vai marutah svāpayah*), Indra's allies in the battle with Vṛtra when all other Gods desert him (*ib.* and III.16); and by such expressions as *āptakāma* (BU.IV.3.21, cf. CU.I.1.6), *kāmasyāpti* (KU.II.11), *sarvāpti* (Kaus.U.III.3), and *té brāhmaṇāpuḥ áthāmr̥tā āsuḥ* (ŚB.XI.2.3.6). This relationship of the loyal breaths to the Breath, their first principle, can also be stated as that of the sensitive selves (the 'seeing man', *cākṣusapuruṣa*, CU.VIII.12.4, the 'hearing man', etc.; collectively the man himself—*prāṇā u ha vāva, rājan, manusyaśaṁbhūtiḥ*, JUB.IV.7.4, *akṣara sammānaś cakṣurmayah śrotoramayaś chandomayo manomayo vāñmaya ātmā*, AA.III.2.2; cf. Hermes, Lib. XI.2.12a) to the central Self, as in Kaus. U.IV.20 where on the one hand the foreknowing-Self (*prajñatman*) enters into the body, and on the other 'these (sensitive) selves depend on that Self as retainers on their chieftain' (*tam etam ātmānam ete ātmano 'nvavasyanti yathā śreṣṭhinām svāḥ*): he for them and they for him, 'For thou art ours, and we are thine' (RV.VIII.92.32).⁹⁹ It is when a man is 'asleep' in the sense intended above, and more briefly in CU.VI.8.1, where 'what is called "being asleep" is really "coming into one's own"' (*svapitīty ācakṣate svaim hy apilo bhavati*), and it is clear that *svapna* as a technical term really means the mastery of the senses and effectively *dhyāna*, as also in BU.II.1.17 where (just as in Hermes Trismegistus, Lib. I.1) 'a man is said to be "asleep" when he curbs the senses' (as horses are curbed),¹⁰⁰ and only when he is thus 'asleep', that he is really empowered and really free. 'When he "sleeps" these worlds are his, then he becomes as a great King or a great Brāhmaṇ; likewise he attains to the high and the low. Even as a great King, taking with him his people, so also "this man", reining in

his senses, drives about in (the chariot of) his own body at will' (BU.II.1.18). The only royal road to power is to become one's own master; the mastery of whatever else follows. This is the traditional 'secret of government', Chinese and Platonic as much as it is Indian.

The whole point of the injunction 'Let the Comprehensor sleep' (*tásmad evamvit svap्यात्*) in ŚB. X.5.2.12 will be lost if we think it is opposed to the 'Let him fight' (*tasmād yuddhyasva*) or 'Act' (*kartum arhasi*) of BG.II.18 and III.21. These are no longer conflicting, but coincident imperatives for what is now the *mixta persona* of Krṣṇārjunau rather than the single and hesitant person of Arjuna only. The 'sleep' intended is having the sense powers in hand and under one's control and thus really possessed (as is explicit in BU.II.1.17), and this is the 'autonomy' of the King who is free to move-at-will in his own realm (*ib.* 18): while the 'action' intended is the activity of one whose actions are not reactions to pleasure and pain but only such as are 'correct'. To combine and paraphrase BG. II. 69 and IV.18, 'He who sees inaction in action, and action in inaction, sleep in waking and waking in sleep, he is wise, he is awake, he is all in act.' 'Yoga is skill in works' (*karmasu kauśalam*, BG. II.50)—it will be recalled that the original value of *σοφος* (*sophos*), 'wise', is precisely that of *kuśala*, 'expert'); the kingly art is precisely *karma yoga*, 'and it need but little of this lore to save from the great fear' (BG.II.40). The *dharana*, *dhyāna*, *saṁādhi* of *yoga* (Christian *consideratio*, *contemplatio*, and *excessus* or *raptus*) are so many degrees of self-possession, consummated in a going out of or being emptied of oneself and a finding of one's real Self, which is also the 'Self' of the immanent Spirit: 'When the rider in the (psycho-physical) vehicle is liberated from all these things with which he has been stuffed (*paripūra*) and by which (sense perceptions) he has been overcome, then indeed he proceeds to union with himself (*ātmann eva sāyujyam upaiti*, MU.IV.4; cf. Plato, *Phaedo* 66 C, 67 A). We are thus brought back to the deepest values of 'self-possession': 'When thou art rid of self, then art thou self-controlled (*dīnes selbes gewaltic [your over-riding self]*)—*svarājan*, *έγκρατη έαντον [egratēs*

*heautou], and self-controlled art self-possessed (*dīnes selbes eigen* [your own self]), and self-possessed possessed of God (*ist got dīn eigen* [God is your very self]) and all that he has ever made' (Eckhart, Pfeiffer, p. 598), a passage that reads like a literal translation from an Upanisad: *prasannātmātmani sthitvā, sukham avyayam aśnute*, MU.VI.20! By the same token a deeper sense emerges in the expression 'All alone by himself', in the conflict with Death, in which the issue is literally one of 'victory or death', we are 'all alone', but 'by oneself', that means side by side with our very Self, *ātmanaiva sahāyena* (Manu, VI.49; *ātmasākṣi* of *Suparṇādhyāya* in Mund. Up. III.1.1–10), the 'Inseparable Companion' of BU.II.1.11 and Kaus. Up. IV.12).*

There remains then to be effected in Everyman, who is still a kingdom or house divided against itself, such a marriage of selves as we have spoken of, and as in CU.VII.25 and AA.II.3.7. We have already alluded to the consummation of this divine marriage (*daivam mithunam, ιερός γαμος*) described in ŚB.X.5.2. 11–16 as the beatific union of Indra and Indrāṇī, 'the Persons in the right and left eyes'.¹⁰¹ These two are respectively the King and Queen on the right and on the left; what we have elsewhere called the Inner Sage and Outer King are here, then, thought of in accordance with the functional symbolism with which we are now familiar, the King and the Queen; they represent in fact the *brahma* and *kṣatra*, and just as we saw in ŚB. IV.1.4.1f. that the success of whatever is undertaken by either depends upon a marital consent of wills—a special case of the general principle enunciated in CU.I.1. 6–8—so here the union of Indra with Indrāṇī 'makes them successful' (*samardhayati*). The holy marriage, the synthesis (*samidhi*) of the conjoint principles, immortal and mortal 'selves' implied in CU.VII.25.2, is even more poignantly described in BU.IV.3.21: 'That is his hypermetrical form,'¹⁰² from which all evil has been struck away, free of all fear. As a man embraced by a darling bride (*priyāyā striyā sampāriṣvaktah*) is conscious neither of a within or without, so this man embraced by the foreknowing-spiritual-Self (*prajñéānātmaṇā*) knows naught of a within or a without; that is verily his (real)

form, in which he is possessed of his desires, the Spirit being his desire, so that he is undesirous (*ātmākāmām āptākāmām akāmām*) and is excepted from sorrow.' This is manifestly a return to the primordial state of the Spiritual Person (*ātman, puruṣa*) 'as it were that of a man and a woman embraced' (*yáthā strīpūmānsau sampāriṣvaktau*, BU.I.4.4): 'In dem unbegriften der hohen einekeit, diu alle dinge vernihter in ir selbesheit sunder sich, ist sînde ein âne underscheit. . . Ein und ein vereinet dâ liuhtet blôz. . . Also wirt diu sîle got in gote' (Eckhart, Pfeiffer, pp. 517, 531).¹⁰³ The man is no longer this man So-and-so, but dissolved in himSelf. The outer man has been 'crowned and mitred above himself' (Dante, *Purgatorio* XXVII. 182). It is precisely such a crowning and mitring that is ritually enacted in the Rājasūya: the King's 'divinity' is not 'his own', not 'this man's who sits upon the throne, but that of the principle that overrules him and of which he is, not the reality, but the living image, instrument and puppet. In this experience, the Outer King is merged in the life and being of the Inner Sage, this man in the real Self, *geworden was er ist* (become what he is): the words 'That are thou' have been verified; the longing, 'What thou art, that may I be' has been satisfied.

Like the King's attainment of Brahmanhood (AB.VII.23) and like all the sacrificial Himmelfahrten this is, of course, an experience inevitably followed by a return to oneself, the man So-and-so. But like any other marriage, the nuptial coronation rite marks the beginning of a new order, it is a new man that ascends the throne: an outer man in operation, but now the legitimate agent of a higher than his own will. As the individual is assimilated to the Self, the woman to the man, so is the Regnum to the Sacerdotium: the consorts are unanimous, so that what the one enjoins the other performs. The individual is no longer enslaved by his own desires, but has found an infallible guide and mentor in the person of the Daimon or Indwelling Spirit (*ātmanvat yakṣa, antarātman*), Hegemon (*antaryāmin, netṛ*), Synteresis¹⁰⁴ as Shepherd and Guardian (*rāṣṭragopā, goptr, ārakkha devatā*) and 'correction du savoir-faire' (*pramāṇa*);¹⁰⁵ 'the Inner Sage who may be called the Chaplain'

within you, and to whom the Purohita, who is the Chaplin of the King's house, corresponds in the civil realm. The artist is no longer 'expressing himself', but can say with Dante that 'I take note, and even as He dictates within me, I set it forth' (*Purgatorio* XXIV.52). The married woman is no longer at large, but now in charge of a kingdom, that of her household. And all of these agreements are analogous to the agreement of an Emperor who makes a treaty of peace with a rebellious vassal or would-be independent ruler who, in accordance with customary Indian policy, explicit in the *Arthaśāstra*, is now restored to his throne and empowered to govern, but now as the Emperor's friend. It is the same for the Inner and Outer Man.

There is now a state of peace, where there had been one of anxiety. The composure (*samādhī*) of the outer rebel and inner leader enables the whole man to rise above the battle even while participating in it. The King is now in reality a 'Highness', his actions are no longer determined by the likes and dislikes of his sensitive part (*necessitas coactionis*), but inwardly instigated, and being thus strictly speaking 'inspired', participate in the 'infallibility' of whatever proceeds *ex cathedra*, 'from the tripod of truth'; the burden of responsibility transferred to other shoulders (BG.III.30 *mayi sarvāṇi karmāṇi samnyasya*) no longer adds to the sum of his mortality and we can say: 'O King live for ever.' When we speak of a King as 'His Serene Highness' we are speaking precisely of the truly royal quality of self-possession by which a King, if he be really a King, is indeed 'exalted'.

Thus from the standpoint of Indian sociological theory and that of all traditional politics, an individual tyranny, whether that of a despot, that of an emancipated artist, or that of the self-expressive man or self-sufficient woman, effects in the long run only what is ineffectual (*akṛtāni*, 'misdeeds'): all self-importance leads to the disintegration and finally the death of the body politic, collective or individual. The essence of the traditional politics amounts to this, that 'Self-government' (*svarāj*) depends upon self-control (*ātmasamīyama*), Rule on ruliness. One may say that this conception of government

survives even in modern India, since the political victory foreseen by Gandhi is assuredly one that can only be achieved by a self-conquest.

The King is such by Divine Right and Appointment, and by the same token the Executive of a higher than his own will; or if he rules only by might and does his own will, he is a Tyrant and must be disciplined. The same applied to the individual who, if only concerned with the good of the work to be done and not with himself, and if he thinks of 'himself' only as an instrument governed by his art, is worthy of all honour, but if he asserts and seeks to express himself, worthy of all dishonour and shame.

The Kingship envisaged by the Indian and traditional doctrine is thus as far removed as could be from what we mean when we speak of an 'Absolute Monarchy' or of 'individualism'. The supposedly 'Machiavellian' *Arthaśāstra* flatly asserts (Bk.I. Ch. VI) that only a ruler who rules himself can long rule others: 'Whatever Sovereign, even one whose dominion extends to the ends of the earth, is of perverted disposition and ungoverned senses (*viruddhir vṛttir avāsyendriyah*)¹⁰⁶ must quickly perish,' going on to say that

'The Whole of this Science has to do with a Victory Over the Powers of Perception and Action.'¹⁰⁷

The application is to the 'King', the 'man of action' and 'artist' in any domain whatever; there is nothing that can be truly and well done or made except by the man in whom the marriage of the Sacerdotium and the Regnum has been consummated, nor can any peace be made except by those who have made their peace with themselves.¹⁰⁸

SUBHAM BHAVATU

Notes and References

1. 'Make ye the divine, adorable, perfect AGNI, at the progressive, uninterrupted sacrifice, your Foreman' (Purohita);
2. 'To him in whose realm the High Priest goeth foremost, the people of themselves do homage';
3. 'Go on thy way from good to better, Br̥haspati be thy forerunner!'
4. 'The Spiritual-authority foremost, be my dominion dread and unassailable';
5. 'Forward the Spiritual-authority, forward the Temporal-power! unto their union';
6. 'Kṣatra (the Temporal-power) is vindicated through Brahma (the Spiritual-authority)';
7. 'Truth, O King, is the Supreme Brahma; be the Truth thy consort'.

Other references to Kingship and Government:

- 'May we as Purohitas watch over the kingship.' TS.I.7.10
 For Purohita as guardian against wrong doing, see JB.III.94
 'Kings are the theatre for the manifestation of God's kingship; clerics the mirrors for God's wisdom'. *Mathnawi* VI.3174
 'Kingship is at once the greatest of human achievements, and not to be taught'. Apollonius of Tyana, *Epistle* XXXVI.
 'The art of kingship, a king eminently connected with Justice'. Philostratus, *Vit.AP.* VI.21
 'The government of one man if it provides all round for the welfare of the community, is popular government'. Philostratus, *Vit.Ap.* V.35
 '... the idea of a kingly government which respects most of all the freedom of the governed.' Marcus Aurelius, *The Meditations* I.14
 'I'm for Monarchy to keep us equal'. Oliver Goldsmith
 'That which now calleth itself the people is unworthy of Kings'. Nietzsche

'The authority of kings is descended from Anu'. Langdon, *Semitic Myths*, p. 294

'The concept of the kingdom of God on earth depends (as Professor Buckler often reminds us) for its revelation of the inner meaning of eastern kingship'.

In the Old Testament, *Psalms* 87-93, lauds the 'Civitas Dei', the City of God.

Philo, in *Devita Mosis* II.4 speaks of 'the King as the living Law'. The true Cynic is a king 'who participates in the rule of Zeus'. *Epictetus* III.22.34, 95; *Homeric Hymns* XXX.5.4

'Our customary designation for a monarchy that aims at the common advantage is "kingship"—(but) "tyranny" is monarchy ruling in the interest of the monarch'. Aristotle, *Politics*, Bks.III,V.

'Tyranny is the rule of one seeking his own interest. Oligarchy seeks the interests of the rich. Democracy seeks the interests of the poor'. St. Thomas' commentary on Aristotle's *Politics*, Bk.III-7.

'God is not a tyrant ... but a king governing with justice (*dikaiosyne*). . . and for a king there is no fitter name than father'. Philo, *Prob.* 2.2.

'... ill lordship, which doth ever cut the heart of subject peoples'. Dante, *Paradiso*, VIII.73.

See Plato's *Republic* 562, for the 'origin of tyranny', and his *Statesman* 276, for a king that is distinguished from the tyrant; and *Republic* 455D for Royalty defined.

Heres 258 on *Genesis* XX-7 'Restore the woman to the man, because he is a prophet, and shall pray for thee; and thou shalt live'. *I Cor.* XI.7
 '... the woman is the glory of the man'.

2. Evola, J., *Rivolto contra il mondo moderno*, Milan, 1934, p. 105. Evola's thesis, in his discussion of the Regnum, forces him to misinterpret AB.VIII.27. Had it not been for this, his admirable chapter 'Uomo e Donna' (of which an English version was published in *Viśvabharati*, Feb.-April 1940), applied to the true relationships of the Sacerdotium and the Regnum (approximately 'Church and State'), would have acquired a greater significance. As it is, Evola's argument for the superiority of the Regnum, the active principle, to the Sacerdotium, the contemplative principle, is a concession to that very 'mondo moderno' against which his polemic is directed.

His argument is as much a perversion of the Greek as it is of the Indian doctrine. In the Greek tradition the heroic kind or caste (*genos* = *jāti*), alike in the soul and the community,—'that part of our soul

which is endowed with bravery (*andreia* = Skr. *vīrya*) and courage (*thumos*, Skr. *Vdhū*), and which is the lover of victory' (*philonikos* = Skr. *jisnu*) (Plato, *Timaeus* 70 A).—is the best part of the mortal or animal soul, superior to the appetitive and inferior to the spiritual and immortal part that lays down the law. As such its seat is in the heart, between the bowels and the head; it is the defender of the whole community; its function is to listen to the Voice (*logos*) from the Akropolis, to serve (*hyperetein*) and cooperate in battle (*symmachos einai*) with the sacred principle against the mob of the appetites (within us) or of moneyed men (in the city). The three parts of the soul (or body politic) thus evidently correspond in hierarchy to the *brahmā*, *kṣatra*, and *viś*, respectively the Sacerdotium, Regnum, and Commons of the Vedic tradition (in which the *sūdra* is represented by the Asuras); and there can be no possible doubt of the superiority of the sacred to the royal character.

That the Spiritual Authority, Plato's *hieron*, etc., is also the Ruler, Plato's *archōn*, etc., just as the *brahmā* is 'both the *brahmā* and the *kṣatra*', means indeed that the Supreme Power is a royal as well as a priestly power, but quite certainly does *not* mean that the *kṣatra* considered apart from the *brahmā* is itself the supreme authority or anything more than its agent and servant.

A.M. Hocart, in *Les Castes*, Paris, 1938, p. 65, repeats Evola's error, saying 'The man and his wife are heaven and earth, just as are the king and the priest' where he should have said 'just as are the priest and the king'.

3. The Bolt (*vajra*) being the most essential symbol of the kingship as a delegated power (RV. as cited, and TS.II.1.3.4, ŚB.1.2.4.1, V.4.4.15, XIII.4.4.1.2). If we also find the royal 'virility' (*vīrya*) equated with the bow (ŚB.V.3.50.30), no antinomy is involved, the bow being clearly analogous to the *vajra* (both are held upright and grasped in the middle), and the arrows discharged from it corresponding to those which are actually the penetrating points of the *vajra*, from which they are derived in TS.VI.1.3 and ŚB.I.2.4.1. The bow is as much as the *vajra* a solar weapon; the bolt is a 'shaft' of light, the arrows that the sun discharges are 'shafts' of light.

4. Perhaps as a disciple; cf. ŚB.XI.5.4.2 (*hastam grhnāti*). Also ŚB.IX.2.3.3 where Indra makes Brahman, that is, Br̄haspati, who is the Brahmā, his ally.

5. Br̄haspati, whose identity with Agni, Priest and King, is unquestioned, is 'seven-mouthed' and 'seven-rayed' in verse 4 of the

same hymn. He is regularly the Divine Sacerdotium (*brahmā*), and High Priest (*brahmā*) of the Gods, as Indra is the Regnum (*kṣatra*). JB.II.128-30 cites Indra's appointment of Br̄haspati as Purohita. 'Agni-Br̄haspati' is the answer to the question asked in RV.VIII.64.7 *brahmā kastam (indrām) saparyati*; supported by AV.III.21.3 *ya indrena saratham... agnibhyo hutām astu*. The verses of our hymn are quoted in AB.VIII.26, describing Br̄haspati as the archetype of the human Purohita and Brahmā, who 'takes after' him. [ŚB.XIII.6.2.16 'Br̄haspati truly is the Brāhma(n)]. The Brahmā is, of course, the infallible Brāhma(n) priest who does not take any active part in the Sacrifice, at which his presence is nevertheless indispensable. Himself remaining silent, his relation to the three other Brāhma(n) officiants whose operation is active and vocal is precisely that of Director to Executive, he is thus Brahmaṇaspati and Vācaspati (the *brahmā*, as *rc* being precisely the vocalised *brahmā*), and protects the kingdom (AV.XIX.30.3 *brahmaṇaspatim tvām indrasyāhur varma tvam rāsthānī rakṣasi*). This is the explanation of 'the very close connection of brahman with vāc' (cf. AA.I.1.1 and 1.3.8 with Keith's notes); as *akṣara* is brahma, so *akṣarā* (RV. VII.15.9 and 36.7) is Vāc; this connection is nothing other than that of Manas = Prajāpati with Vāc, or than that of Brahmā with Sarasvati-Vāc in the 'later mythology'. It is not altogether easy to understand why Brahmā, the God, has been regarded as the creation of the 'later mythology' (Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, p.118). It would rather appear that the Buddhists were essentially right in referring to Brahmā Sanātakumāra as the supreme deity of the Brāhmans and to Indra Sujampati as his vassal. For Br̄haspati, who is at once the *brahmā* and the *brahmā* of the Gods, is certainly himself a God, and why not, then, the God Brahmā, the person of Brahmā? 'Yonder Gods assuredly knew that Brahma of old' (AV.XIII.2.13).* The most that could be said is that *brahmā* in RV. is more a title than a name, and only later on becomes a name; but this changes nothing in the nature of the Person to whom the name applies.

It is only the actual iconography of Brahmā that is late, as is the Buddha's. In being 'lotus-born' and therefore *padmāsana*, Br̄haspati is still the Agni sprung from the 'lotus' in RV.VI.16.13, and 'Vasiṣṭha the child of Mitrāvaraṇau. the Sacerdotium (*brahma*) born of Manas

**purā brahma devā amī viduh*

and Urvaśī, whom the Viśve Devāḥ supported in the lotus', RV. VII.33.11, where the equation of Mitra with Manas and Varuṇa with Urvaśī (f.) may be remarked. Vasiṣṭha, the Sacerdotium, is assuredly the Br̥haspati who in RV. VIII.96.13–15 'assumes a body in the womb of Arñsumatī' (Psyche) and enables Indra to overcome his godless foes 'with Br̥haspati as yoke-fellow' (*bṛhaspätinā yújā*). We see now why Vasiṣṭha should be Indra's instructor (in the *virāj*, of which 'he who gets the most becomes the chieftain', *śresthah*), and why formerly none but a Vasiṣṭha (descendant of Vasiṣṭha) becomes a *brahmā*, i.e. 'a Br̥haspati' (ŚB.XII.6.1.38–41). RV.VII. 33.14 *yuddhyata* addressed to Indra and his 'Bulls' (Maruts) corresponds to BG.II.18 *yuddhyasva* addressed to Arjuna. In RV.V.48.5 Varuṇa 'ending the fair garment and operative with his tongue' (*jihvāyā . . . r̥ijate cānu vásānah*), i.e. Varuṇa proceeding as Agni the Priest 'with his purifying ladle' (*pāvakāyā juhvā*, RV.VI.11.2), is already, like the iconographic *Brahmā*, 'four-faced' (*cáтурaníkah*), Agni, the *brahmā* of RV.IV.9.4 and VII.7.5, himself explicitly 'four-sighted' (*caturakṣáh*) in RV.1.31.13, which is rightly understood by Śāyaṇa to mean 'facing towards the four directions'. (Hermias on *Phaedrus*, 'He of the four-fold eyes facing this way, that way').

The Pandavas incarnate deities. Arjuna, wearer of the crown or diadem is *kirītin* and Draupadi is *Śrī*. Also, bearing in mind that 'Arjuna' is Indra (VS.X.21, ŚB.II.1.2.12 and V.4.3.7), or, what amounts to the same thing, Indra's son (Mbh. Parva-ch.199), that Kṛṣṇa and Arjuna, like Indrāgnī (RV.VI.59.5) and like Mātali (=Vāyu-Mātariśvan) and Indra (Mbh.), share a common car (*purā rājabhyah purohitā eva rathān samgrhīṇāty aupadraṣṭyāya nedayam pāpam karavad*), and that 'where these are, Kṛṣṇa the Lord of Yoga and Arjuna the Archer, there are fortune, victory, security of being and governmental-science' (*niti*, BG.XVIII.78)—it is clear that Kṛṣṇa is the Sacerdotium (*brahma*), as is Arjuna the Regnum (*kṣatra*), and Kṛṣṇa therefore to be equated with the Agni-Br̥haspati-Vasiṣṭha, *brahma* etc. of RV. It is just because Arjuna is Indra—that Indra who is *idam-dra* because he alone saw Brahma (AA.II.4=AIT.up.I.1, similarly JB.III.203, cf. JUB. IV.20–21= Kena Up.14f.)—that he alone is able to see Kṛṣṇa's 'supreme form' (BG.XI.47–8). The BG is an Arthaśastra; its burden of the control of the senses and conquest of self is identical with that which Kauṭilya describes as 'the whole of this science' of government (see p. 45 *infra*).

Why then is Kṛṣṇa 'black', as the name implies, or 'blue-black', and

Arjuna, as again the name implies, 'white'? In the first place, the 'Drop' that in RV.VIII.96.13–15 takes birth (*avatiṣṭhati*, the regular expression used of the *ātman* when it mounts the bodily vehicle) as Indra's fellow, and for which he has been longing, is 'Black' (*kṛṣṇa*): according to Śāyaṇa, this 'Kṛṣṇa' is the name of an Asura, presumably 'Viśvarūpa, the son of Tvaṣṭṛ, a sister's son of the Asuras, who was the Purohita of the Gods' (TS.II.5.1.1), i.e Br̥haspati, *asurya* son of Tvaṣṭṛ, RV.II.23.2 and 17, and/or that 'Uśanas Kāvya of the Asuras' (TS.II.5.8.5) with whom Kṛṣṇa identifies himself in BG.X.37. Again because Agni and Indra are respectively the Golden Person in the Sun (Death in ŚB.X.5.2.13) and the bright Sun itself (ŚB.X.4.1.5), as in the eye, where the black (*kṛṣṇa*) represents Agni and the white (*sukla*) Indra (BU.II.2.2); 'the blue, the deep black' (*nīlam paraḥ kṛṣṇam*), i.e. the pupil, of the solar and the microcosmic eyes corresponding to the masculine, spiritual power (*ama*, Agni, Vāyu, Āditya, *ātman*, *sāman*, etc.) and 'the shining white' (*suklam bhās*) to the feminine temporal Dominion (*sā*, Earth, Air, Sky, vision, *rc*, etc.), CU.I.6 and 7. Cf. TS.III.1.1 'dark colour (*nīlī*) and his beauty do not leave him,' when *nīla* is the proper colour of the initiate, who would by no means turn pale. It is clear that Kṛṣṇa's *asurya varṇa* is that of the Divine Darkness, and does not imply a local origin from any swarthy aboriginal people, except in the ontological sense that the Asuras are 'aborigines'.

6. The reference is to the performance of the sacrifice, which is the primary 'work' of the King above (Indra as Viśvakarmā, RV.VIII.98.2) as it is of earthly Kings. Inasmuch as the King is the Executive (*kartr*), his is essentially the *karmamārga*, the 'active life', as distinguished from the *jñānamārga*, the 'contemplative life', of the Brāhmaṇa. Further, it will be seen that in giving Agni his 'due' or 'share' (*bhāga*)—from Agni's point of view *namasyantaś ca mām bhaktyā*, as in BG.IX.14—Indra becomes a *bhaktr*, just as in RV.X.51.8–9 where Agni demands his 'share of the oblation' (*haviṣo datta bhāgam*) the Gods who grant it are *bhaktis*. The like is implied for the human sacrificer who gives his 'portion' (*bhāga*) to Agni (RV.II.10.6) and 'in appointing to each their share, endears the Gods' (*yathā bhāgam tad devatāḥ prīṇāti*, AB.III.4 and 38); cf. ŚB.I.9.3.8 for *bhakti* as a share in the sacrifice to the gods, and RV.IV.2.8.10, where the generous Sacrificer 'in offering the oblation, endeareth Thee' (*priyam vā tvā kṛṇavate haviṣmān*) and ib.14 where 'dear to Thee be his invocation'. So also in TS.V.4.5.4 where Agni 'endeared by the gift of his own portion (*svena bhāgadheyena prītah*), burns away the sacrificer's evil'

(*pāpmānam api dahati*); cf. TS.II.1.4.6 where Indra approaches Agni 'with his own share' and Agni then burns away the sixteen coils of Vṛtra in which Indra is wrapped, and in like manner in the case of 'whoever approaches him with his own share (*svena bhāgadheyenopasṛtah*), Agni burns up his evil', and 'approaches' might have been rendered by 'takes refuge with'; the preceding texts from TS. are echoed in BU.VI.3.1 *bhāgadheyam juhomi*, etc., and the Gods having been thus 'delighted' (*trptāh*), 'may they delight me' (*mā... tarpayan*) it is never for nothing that a man devotes himself. The 'sacrificial offering' (*yajñiyam bhāgam*) to which Agni moves in RV.X.124.3, in the same way implies a *bhaktrī*, here again doubtless Indra. That 'Thou art ours and we are thine' (RV.VIII.92.32) implies no less a mutual loyalty, like that of thane and earl or wife and husband (cf. the oaths in AB.VIII.15), that belongs to the very essence of 'Bhakti'.

The bhakti 'tone' of RV.V.46.1 (*hayo na vidvān ayuji svayam... nāsyā... vaśmi*, etc., corresponding to I.190.4 *atyo na yānsad yakṣabhr̥d vicetāh*) and that of VII.86.7 (*aram dāso na mīlāhuṣe karāṇy aham*) as in BG.IX.14–15 is unmistakable. The Sacrificer is identified with the oblation (*havir vai dīkṣitāh*, TS.VI.1.4.5); it is himself that he devotes (SB.*passim*); the Sacrifice is a symbolic suicide (*ātmānam ālabhate*, AB.11.3; cf. Eggeling's note on SB.I.2.3.5 and the designation of the Sacrificer as *ātmayāji* in Maitri Up.VI.10). AB.III.8 combines the notions of the contemplation (*dhyāna*) of a deity, the offering of an oblation and that of sacrifice with an 'endearment' (*yasyai devatāyai havir gr̥hitām syāt tām dhyāyed. . . sākṣād eva tad devatām prīnāti, pratyakṣād devatām yajati*), and AB.III.20 *yathā bhāgam devatām prīnāti*. There is no real difference between the implications of these Vedic and Brāhmaṇa texts and that of, for example, BG.XII.19 'He that hath devotion is dear to me' (*bhaktimān me priyo narah*). It would be naïve to maintain that the Vedic Sacrificer, who certainly performed 'devotions' was not also 'devoted', or that he never loved the 'Friend' (Mitra).

7. Note the singular. The Mixta Persona of Mitrāvaruṇau, Supreme Identity of Conjoint Principles, is the same as that of the 'One Akṣara that is both Agni the Sacerdotum and Indra the Regnum' (SB.X.4.1.9); cf.RV.I.108.7 'Whether ye, Indrāgnī, take your pleasure at home (*sve duronē*, i.e. *guhyam, ab intra*) or in the Sacerdotium and the Regnum' *brahmāṇi rājani vā*, i.e. *prādūr, ab extra*, in active administration). With *sve duronē* here cf. JB.I.146 *yathāgr̥ham . . . yathājnāātī vā*,

and KU.II.25. The Vedic 'dual' divinities imply, for the most part at least, a biunity (syzygy) of conjoint principles, active and passive in mutual relationship or both active in relation to things externally administered. The names of such dual divinities cannot always be adequately rendered by the simple use of an adjunctive particle. The resources of language and iconography are inadequate to the representation of an identity of contraries, such as *chāyātapau* or *yin* and *yang*: we cannot think of contraries as coincident, but only as associated, and it may be, reconciled; in other words, the truth of this truth (*satyasya satyam*) is paradoxical, *satyena channam*. Thus Mitrāvaruṇau is not an aggregate or mere composition of an essence and a nature, but the one Mixta Persona of both: while at the same time they are Mitra and Varuṇa, and whatever is born of such a pair proceeds *ex principio conjunctivo*. The *dvaibhāva* of MU.VII.II is by no means a contradiction of *advaita*, for just as in Christian doctrine, essence and nature, being and existence, mercy and majesty are one in God. (cf. Philo. *Sac.* 59—God's majesty and goodness, himself *sis ḍōg's mesos tripas*). Monophysitism would have been as much a heresy from the Indian as from the Christian point of view.

The priority of the Counsel (*kratu*) to the Power (*dakṣa*), i.e. of the contemplative to the active life, is already explicit in RV.VIII.13.1 where Indra purifies the former and so gains the latter.

It should be here noted that the order in which the component parts of a dual appear is purely grammatical (cf. Caland on PB.VII.6.9, and Pāṇini II.2.34 where *śūdrāryau* means 'an *ārya* and a *śūdra*'): the form Indrāgnī, for example, if taken literally to be 'Indra and Agni' would be ineffective, it is 'Agni and Indra' (RV.III.25.4) that is to be understood, for as AB.II.37 remarks, 'These two as Indrāgnī were not victorious, but as Agnendrau they won'.

'Regarded as paramount Lord, Agni is Indra' (*indrah paramaiśvaryo gniḥ*, Sāyaṇa on RV.V.2.3.); 'Agni is Indra to the mortal worshipper' (RV.V.3.1 and SB.XIV.2.2.42 'Agni, the greatest of Indras').

8. Literally, 'these two are of himself', i.e. 'these are his two natures'. 'For we must distinguish two things, the will and the power' (St. Augustine, *De spir. et lit.*, 53). 'Two powers are first distinguished (*schizontai*) from the Logos, a poetic (*kāvya*), according to which the artist ordains all things and which is called God (=brahma); and the royal power (=ksatra) of him called the Lord (=iśvara) by which he controls all things' (Philo as cited by Brehier, *Les idées. . . de philon d'Alexandre*, 1925, pp.113-14). 'God was not Lord until he had a

creature subject to himself (St. Thomas Aquinas, *Sum. Theol.*, I.13.7, ad 6).

The 'two selves' are the 'two forms' of Brahma (BU.II.3, etc.), the 'dual nature' (*dvaitibhāva*) of the 'Great Self' (*mahātman*) in accordance with which he participates in both the 'true' and the 'false' (*satyānṛtopabhogārthah*, MU.VII.11.8), or, as this might have been otherwise expressed, in virtue of which he is the common source of Devas and Asuras, that is, participates both in divine and human experience, the Gods being the Truth and men Untruth (SB.III.9.4.1). The trace of the divine biunity appears in the two selves of the man who is *dvyātman* (JB.I.17, etc., see note 84).

Thus the Purohita is 'the half of the self of the Kṣatriya' (*ardhātmo ha vā esa kṣatriyasya*, AB.VII.26), as are Sky and Earth (AA.III.1.2) and as is the man of the woman (SB.X.5.2.8, and BU.I.4.4), and neither is complete without the other (SB.VIII.6.1.12, V.2.1.10 and XIV.1.3.25), as also holds for Kṛṣṇa and Arjuna (Mbh.II.20.3 and 14). Hence the use of *sārdham*, literally 'plus a half', in connection with any complementary union, as in JUB.I.48.7 where Prajāpati *sārdham samait*, i.e. 'coupled with' Vāc. It is thus literally true that 'the Purohita was in religion and civil affairs the *alter ego* of the king' (SB.IV.1.4.5-6, AB.VIII.24; cf. A.B. Keith, *Rel. and Phil. of the Veda and Upanishads*, 1925, p. 292), or as we should rather say, the king the *alter ego* of the Purohita. For this does not mean that the two 'halves' are reciprocally equal; on the contrary, the relation of one to the other is that of part to whole (cf. A.A.III.1.1 where *manas* and *vāc* are two halves with *satyam* their *sandhi*). The 'only Vrātya' (*Brahma*, *brahma*, *prāṇa*, *Vāmana*, KU.V.3) is the source of the *brahma* and the *kṣatra* (AV.X.2.22, 23 and XV.10.3—as rightly understood by Aufrecht, *pace* Whitney,—where *brahma* is the origin of *kṣatra*; so also SB.XII.7.3.12), the *brahma* (Brahma) is both the *brahma* and the *kṣatra* (SB.X.4.1.9 and T.S. III.5.7 where *Parma*=*brahma* and *brahma+kṣatra*), Agni is both Mitra and Varuna (RV.VIII.12.3; SB.VI.6.3.5; VI.7.4.6 Agni= Indrāgni, IX.4.1.16 'this Agni is both the priesthood and the nobility'). In the case of Manas and Vāc, Vāc is the lesser, 'for Manas is by far the more unlimited (*aparimitataram*) and Vāc by far the more limited' (*parimitatarā*, SB.I.4.4.7, cf.I.4.5.11), and these are the two aspects of Prajāpati, who is 'both the limited and the unlimited' (*parimitāparinīta*, SB.VII.2.2.14, etc.) The Infinite, in other words, always includes the Finite as 'its own', of which it cannot be deprived, whether logically or really (cf. AV.X.8.29 and BU.V.1): It is the Finite nature that can be

logically, if not really, isolated from the Infinite, and therefore stands in need of a 'completion'. Cf. RV.III.31.2 where, of Agni's parents, 'one empowers (*midhan*), the other is the agent' (*karttā*).

9. The relation, in other words, is that of patron to artist, or in the artist that of art to operation, *actus primus* to *actus secundus*. And just as the King is only legitimately such to the extent that he does the will of a higher power—'Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven'—so the *artifex* as an efficient cause is only free to the extent that he agrees with the patron and is governed by his art, or, if not, is merely a 'worker', a 'hand', compelled by economic pressure or driven by his own sweet will or fancy.

10. *Agre*: not *ante principium* (where there is only the Supreme Identity, *tad ekam*, *yāthā strīpūmānsau sampāriṣvaktau*, BU.I.4.3), but with reference to the separation of the male and female principles, Sky and Earth, etc., in *principio*, because of which they are alien to one another until reunited by marriage: *āgre* here and *sr̥stāu* in SB.X.4.1.5 imply 'before the reign begins' or 'at the beginning of the reign' (*pūrvakāle yasya rāstrasya*, Sāyaṇa on AB.VIII.I. and as in PB.VII.6.10); *sr̥stām nānā* in SB.X.4.1.5 corresponding to 'twofold in the beginning' (*dvayām . . . āgre*).

Agre corresponds to *in principio* (Gen.I.1), now rendered 'in the beginning', but which almost all mediaeval commentators, from St. Augustine (*Conf.* XII.20, 27, 29) onwards, have understood to mean 'in the first principle', *in verbo*, *in sapientia*, etc., without reference to time.

11. *Rté* implies not only a spatial separation, but an opposition.

12. Cf. D.11.259 *purakkhatvā* (*puraskṛ*)='serving'.

13. SB.II.6.3.8—'Sūrya governs all this (world), now by means of a good, now by a bad king'; and Par. XIII.108—'Kings, the which are many, and the good ones few'.

14. The root in *sūya*, *sava*, *sūta*, etc., is *sū*. Many scholars distinguish two roots *sū*, (1) to 'impel' or 'instigate' and (2) to 'quicken' or 'generate'. The latter meaning is obvious in RV.VII.101.3 where *sūte* (begets) is opposed to *starīḥ* (sterile). In I.146.5 where Agni, the 'Sun of Men' is *sūḥ*, i.e. *prasavītā*, *utpādayitā* (Sāyaṇa) in relation to all things, in RV.I.113. where *savitūḥ savāya* is 'for the birth of Savitṛ' himself, and in BU.VI.4.19 where Savitṛ, 'He of true quickening' (*satyāprasava*), is invoked in the marriage rite, certainly as progenitive deity, Gandharva and Divine Eros. In our contexts it is this Savitṛ that is the primary instigator or quickener (MU.VI.7 *savanāt savitā*). If in some contexts *sū* is rather to 'instigate' than to 'quicken' (cf.

sūyate=anujñā yate, AV.IV.8.1. Comm.), and may be replaced by forms of *is* or causative forms of *r* (as in AB.II.5), this is because it is only when Manas and Vāc are 'personified' (as is usual in our texts, Manas being identified with Prajāpati, and Vāc as his daughter) that we realise that the consequence of an 'instigation' of Vāc by Manas (or the *brahma*) is an embodiment of what has been 'conceived' and is a 'concept' (BU.II.2.3): the intellectual principle inseminating the mother of which it is to be born, just as in any other aspect of a Logos weaker value of 'quicken': the Purohita is really 'fathering' his 'Counsel' on the King who as the *kartṛ* is to give it effect by means of his *fiat*. And this is only an extension of the acts of aspersion, etc., by which the King has already been 'begotten' (*sūtāḥ*) and 'brought to birth' (*prásūtāḥ*)—for this distinction cf. KB.V.3 *prajā*. . . *sṛṣṭā aprasūtāḥ*= *Avyakta Up.* VI.1. *prajāḥ sṛṣtvā na jāyante*, and BU.I.4.11 where the *kṣatra* is *sṛṣṭam*, but evidently *aprasūtam* until the Rājasūya has taken place.

Eggeling discusses his translation of *sū* in *SBE*. XLI, p.2, note 1. We adopt his usual rendering, 'quicken'. His occasional use of 'spiriter', although true to the essential values, since here as in John VI.63 *spiritus est qui vivificat*, is too awkward to be adopted. We have no doubt that the 'two' roots *sū* are, or were originally, one.

The octad of King-making deities (Savitr, Agni, Br̥haspati, Indra, Rudra, Mitra and Varuṇa) who endow the King with a variety of powers or virtues correspond to the 'good fairies' of folklore who bring their gifts to the newly born solar hero.

15. Buddhas asperse (*abhisic*) Bodhisattvas with their own hands.

16. The word *abhiṣeka* is too often, and especially by translators from the Pali, rendered by 'Coronation'. It is true that Indra wears a crown and is *kirīṭin* accordingly, that Rudra is turbaned (*uṣṇiṣin*) and that the Mahāpurisa is *unhisosīso*, but the putting on of crown or turban plays no important part in the early Indian rites, where it is an 'Aspersion' rather than a 'Coronation' that makes the King.

Not all the water in the rough rude sea

Can wash the balm from an anointed King.

17. For the Priest as the Sacrificer's 'father in God' see JAOS 60, 1940, pp. 50-51. It must be understood that the Rājasūya is 'a congruous rite' (*tat saloma kriyate*, SB.V.3.5.26), so that all that is said elsewhere of the ritual death and rebirth of the Sacrificer can be applied to the King, *a fortiori*. Accordingly, 'He who performs the Rājasūya

becomes the 'child of the Waters. . . He (the Priest) brings him to birth' (*janayati*, 'delivers', in the medical sense and analogically). SB.V.3.5.19-24—a generation that corresponds to that of Indra as King in RV.VIII.97.10 *tataksur indram jajanuṣ ca rājase*, comparable to X.61.7 *ajanayan brahma devā vāstospatiṁ vratapāṁ nirataksan*, and X.66.13 *kṣetrasya patim*. And this is why the Rājasūya is also the Varuṇasava, for the ritual employs the text of VS.X.7 where Varuṇa enthroned in the dwellings of men, is called the 'Child of the Water'. If this is more often an epithet of Agni, it is in place here because the nascent Agni 'is Varuṇa' and 'becomes Mitra' only when 'kindled' (RV.V.3.1), and the Sacrificer's regeneration is likewise a 'kindling' (SB.IV.4.5.23). The intention is to enthrone as King, not a 'Varuṇa', but a 'Mitra'.

As Hocart has remarked with reference to rites of royal installation, 'The theory is that the King (1) dies, (2) is reborn, (3) as a god' (*Kingship*, 1927, p. 70). In this sequence, however, he was unable to recognize the 'death' in the Indian sources, chiefly SB, although he recognized that all regeneration necessarily implies an antecedent death. As to this, it must be remembered that any initiatory rebirth, or indeed a birth of any kind, implies a previous death; for initiatory death may be cited JUB.III.9.4 *enam etad dīkṣayanti . . . mr̥tasya vāvaiṣa tada rūpam bhavati*. Any Sacrifice is a symbolic suicide; it is himself that the Sacrificer to the Gods, to Agni (AB.II.3 *ātmānam ālabhate*; and SB. *passim*); cf. my 'Ātmayajña' in *HJAS*. VI. 358-98.1942. Moreover, the installation of a King parallels not only that of Varuṇa, but that of king Soma, and although it is for a 'supreme sovereignty' and 'not for slaying thee' that Soma is bought, nevertheless 'when they press him they slay him' (SB.III.3.2.8), saying: 'Fear not . . . it is the evil that is slain, not Soma' and 'Thereby he slays all his evil (*sarvam pāpmānam hanti*, VS.VI.35 and SB.III.9.4.17-18). The beating of the King which puts him above the law, so that he can do no wrong (SB.V.4.4.7) is analogous to the pressing of Soma by which 'his evil' is removed (TS.VI.4.8 slaughter of Soma). In the same way the expiatory bath with which a Sacrifice concludes, taken not in flowing ('living') but in Varuṇya (stagnant) waters, is a kind of death (cf. CU.III.17.5 *maraṇam evāvabhr̥thah*), and comparable in this respect to a baptism; the immersion is for the sake of a liberation from all that pertains to Varuṇa, i.e. from evil, and by it 'just as a serpent casts its skin, so is the Sacrificer freed from all evil (*sárvasmāt pāpmāno nirmucyate*), there does not remain in him even so much sin (*ēnas*) as there is in a child' (*yávat*

kumāre, SB.IV.4.5.23), words which, applied to a king, would mean 'even so much evil as there was in him when a prince'. Thus in various ways the King 'dies' and is reborn; the old, Vārunya, man is put off, and the new, Maitreya, man put on, a change that is reflected in the investiture with new garments which follows the immersion, cf. AV.XIV.2.44 'Clothing myself anew... as a bird from an egg, I am freed from all sin'.

Such an absolution is essential. The King is, indeed, 'another man' in the sense of I Sam. X. 6. Hocart cites the fourteenth century Jean Golein who held 'that the king is as much cleansed of his sins' as one takes orders (*Kingship*, p. 93). Charles I wore white robes at his Coronation 'to declare that Virgin purity with which he came to be espoused unto his Kingdom' (Heylin, *Cyprianus Anglicus*, 1668, p. 145), 'Espoused to his Kingdom', i.e. as *bhūpati*, 'Husband of the Earth': for just as the King is the 'wife' of the Priest, so is the Earth in turn *his* 'wife': just as Soma is united to 'these quarters of space as his bride (*ābhīr digbhir mithunēna*), with his dear domain' (*priyēṇa dhāmnā*, SB.III.9.4.20), so is the human king to his own land (*desa*), the shooting of arrows to the four quarters in the *digvijaya* rite being evidently a symbolic demonstration of this relationship. The quarters are, of course, always feminine in relation to their centre and meeting point; e.g. RV.IX.113.2 where Soma is *diśām pati*, cf. AV.II.10.4, A.A.II.2.3, SB.III.9.4.21.,

18. 'Apart from a coincidence of these two, political power and philosophy, there can be no cessation of evils, whether for the state or for the individual' (*Republic* 473 D; Also E.R. Goodenough, *Philo*, p. 190; see note 57. p. 109).

19. BU.IV.1.6 *mano vai samrāt paramām brahma; manas* in all our texts and as identified with Prajāpati, *passim*, is the scholastic *intellectus vel spiritus* (intellect as well as spirit) the divine mind and will, and it is only later that *manas* in the sense of external mind or reason and modern 'intellect' is subordinated to *buddhi* as 'pure intellect'; our *manas* in other words is *nous*, as in Hermes I.6, 11b where 'The Father is *nous*, the Mother *physis*, *logos* the Son.' *Manas*, for SB.X.5.3.1, is that Supreme Identity (*tadekam*) that was in the beginning when 'this' universe neither was nor was not (RV.X.129.1-2). As remarked by Keith, *manas* in the narrower sense of mental 'organ' appears first in Kaus. Up.III (AA., p. 46); this lower and merely rational 'mind' is the seat of 'opinion' rather than of knowledge (MU. VI.30). The 'two minds', pure and impure, are distinguished in MU.VI.34.6 and

elsewhere, as in Plato and Philo. The word *metanoein*, 'to change one's mind' implies the replacement of the impure by the pure *nous*.

20. Cf. Aeschylus, *Suppl.* 595f παρεστὶ δὲ ἐργον ως εἴπος παρεστὶ δὲ ἐργον ὡς εἴπος (epos).

21. Cf. Morel *Egyptian Civilization*, p. 377.

22. That it is the King's function by his Fiat to give expression to the spiritual Counsel, implies the traditional doctrine that human law echoes or reflects Divine Law. Thus, for example, the King, 'who was to be a 'divine man' and so link the people with the spiritual order' is regarded as 'the incarnate representation of supreme and universal Law. In him that Law, itself unformulated, could become vocal (*λογικός, logikos*); that is, the ideal man had the power of taking a Law which was spirit and divine purpose, and of applying it to human problems. Through him the Law, or nature of God, could become statutory laws, and true laws for society could never, it was universally believed, be had in any other way' (Goodenough, *An Introduction to Philo Judaeus*, 1940, pp. 38-39).

23. Also SB.IV.6.7.5.6. Nothing is *done* unless *Vāc* voices commands of mind, 'Do this'. Mind alone does not *act*. cf. MU.III.2 and Hermes XII.1.2,4.11 and XII.1.13A, from which *vāc*, *phone* is distinct from *logos*.

24. On unregulated Speech, see Philo, *De Somniis* II.260.

25. Comparable to Śaṅkaras commentary on BU.I.4.14, *satyam iti yathā sāstrārthatā sa evānuṣṭhīyamānō dharmanāmā bhavati* ['Truth' is the fact of being in accordance with the scriptures. The same thing, when it is practised, is called righteousness...]

26. Just as in SB.IV.1.4.3 'whatever the Regnum does (*yad dha kim ca... karma cakré*) unquickened (*aprasūtam*) by the sacerdotium, therein it fails (*na... samānṛdhe*) or conversely 'succeeds, (*ānṛdhe*). We see from this collation that *kṛta* and *samīddha*, *akṛta* and *asamīddha* are equivalents: that what is 'misdone' is really 'not done' at all.

See Plato *Sophist* 237; falsehood is what is 'unsaid' and misfeasance is nonfeasance. Cf. Skr. *abhuṭavādi*, a liar, and Ger. *Unthat* corresponds to 'nithing'. Finally Manu VIII.127 *kautasākṣyam kṛtam... cāpyakṛtam bhavet* (= 'whatever has been done must be [considered as] undone'); BU.I.4.15 'akṛtam'. Thus the privative *a* in *akṛta* does not deny an event, but asserts that the event was not an act but a failure to 'act'. The verb 'to act' has strictly speaking only a good and positive sense, as when we speak of God as 'all in act'; a sin is not an 'act' but an 'omission'.

In TS.VI.4.9.5, full vessels represent things done in the Sacrifice, as contrasted with things 'not done'; only acts and not omissions, repel the Rāksasas. St. Thomas Aquinas in the same way speaks of the sinner as 'non-existent' (*Sum. Theol.*, I.20.2 ad 4), not meaning to say that no one sins. In the same way, too, *asat*, literally 'not being', is also in many contexts 'naught-y', i.e. evil; not a mere nothingness, but a mere potentiality. All these propositions depend on the principle *ens et bonum convertuntur* (=being and goodness meet), common to all traditional metaphysics. In BG.XVII.27-28 *sat* and *asat* are in all cases categories of what the Nominalist would call 'real' things. In JUB.I.53.1 the two worlds—Sky and Earth, with all their equivalents, mas. and fem.—are respectively *sat* and *asat*.

The question is of importance in connection with the so-called Vedantic doctrine of 'illusion'. It is evident that whatever is an 'appearance' (*rūpa*) must be an appearance of something and that whatever 'significance' (*nāman*) is attached to this appearance must involve a correct or an incorrect interpretation of its basis. It is by means of the intelligible and the sensible, 'name and appearance' (*nāmarūpa*), that which is referred to by Vāc and recognized by Manas, that Brahma, *Deus absconditus* (*brāhmaivá parārdhám agacchat*), 'returned (*pratyávait*, 'came down again', i.e. descended as *avatāra*) to these worlds which are coextensive with what can be sensed and named' (SB.XI.2. 3.3-6, cf.BU.I.4.7, S.II.101, D.II.63, 64), becoming thus, and thus 'enjoying', both what is 'real' (*satya*) and what is 'false' (*anṛta*, TU.II.6, cf.MU.VII.28. 8); it is, indeed, by a marriage of these two, *satya* and *anṛta*, affirmation (*om*) and negation (*na*), that man is propagated and multiplied (*tayor mithunāt prajāyate bhūyān bhavati*, A.A.II.3.6). Our functional existence, unlike our being, is logical and analytical, determined equally by what we are not and what we are; we distinguish subject from object and content from form.

There are, of course, 'true' and 'false' names of things; the former correspond to their essences or formative ideas and the latter to our own thinking. SB.XI.3.2.5, having in mind the latter and conventional nomenclature, remarks that of these two, 'name and appearance', the latter is the 'greater'. From this point of view it is the appearance that is 'real' and the name that is 'false'; it is not our senses but our interpretations that are at fault; we do see the glitter (cf. BU.V.14.4), but are wrong in assuming that all that glitters is gold (Arist. Met. IV.6.23). An ascription of 'unreality' to temporalia does not mean that

appearances to not appear, but that we are mistaken in describing them as 'things' and not simply as appearances, and misguided in trying to find out what they are instead of asking 'of what' are they the appearances (cf. ŠA.V.S=KauṣU.III.8); mistaken in assuming that these are the appearances of any thing, rather than of a protean no-thing 'veiled in all things' (BU.II.5.18). It is remarkable that in discussing this very question of the world Sextus Empiricus makes use of the familiar Indian parable of the snake and the rope (SB.IV.4.5.3 'snakes are like rope'), saying that the Sceptics by no means 'abolish phenomena' but only 'question whether the underlying object is such as it appears. . . our doubt does not concern the appearance itself but the account given of the appearance' (Pyrrhonism, I.227-8). St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on the Gospels*, of Matthew 6, 23; 'Just as men in the dark see nothing clearly, taking a rope for a serpent . . . so rich men shrink from what is in no way terrible for one who has eyes.' So also Heracleitus (Aph.IV and XII taken together). This is precisely the Vedantic position: the rope is not a snake, nor even 'really' a rope, but 'really' a manifestation of Brahma, 'the Real who becomes whatever there is here' (TU.II.6 and Arist. Met. IV.5.23 'And as concerning truth, that not every appearance is "true", we shall say first'). In the same way, as we have repeatedly pointed out, *māyā* does not mean an 'illusion' as distinct from a real phenomenon, but rather the means of creating any appearance whatever: that these worlds are *māyāmaya* does not mean that they do not 'exist', but that they are quantitative, or 'material' in the sense of the etymologically equivalent *mātrā*, 'measure', to be understood in the sense of Heracleitus XX, 'ever-living Fire, in measures (*metra*) being kindled and in measures going out' (*apobennumenon=nirvāta*, as applicable to fire, wind and passion); to these 'measures' of Heracleitus (cf. Plato, *Timaeus* 45 BC where vision is a part of the internal fire) correspond the *tejomātrāḥ* of BU.IV.4.1=*prāṇāgnayah* of Praśna Up.IV.3, i.e. the human elementals or 'powers of the soul'.

For *māyā*, from $\sqrt{mā}$ and as denoting the principle of measurement and thus the means of creation see 'Nirmāṇakāya' in *JRAS* 1938, pp.81-4, and AV.XIII.2.3 and 5, *nānārūpe ahani karṣi māyayā. . . divāṁ ca sūrya pṛthivīṁ ca devīṁ ahorātre vimimāno yad ēsi*.

27. 'We cannot speak or name correctly by speaking as we like but only by speaking in accordance with the ascertained nature of the things referred to' Plato, *Cratylus* 387.

In TS.VI.4.9.5, full vessels represent things done in the Sacrifice, as contrasted with things 'not done'; only acts and not omissions, repel the Rākṣasas. St. Thomas Aquinas in the same way speaks of the sinner as 'non-existent' (*Sum. Theol.*, I.20.2 ad 4), not meaning to say that no one sins. In the same way, too, *asat*, literally 'not being', is also in many contexts 'naught-y', i.e. evil; not a mere nothingness, but a mere potentiality. All these propositions depend on the principle *ens et bonum convertuntur* (=being and goodness meet), common to all traditional metaphysics. In BG.XVII.27-28 *sat* and *asat* are in all cases categories of what the Nominalist would call 'real' things. In JUB.I.53.1 the two worlds—Sky and Earth, with all their equivalents, mas. and fem.—are respectively *sat* and *asat*.

The question is of importance in connection with the so-called Vedantic doctrine of 'illusion'. It is evident that whatever is an 'appearance' (*rūpa*) must be an appearance of something and that whatever 'significance' (*nāman*) is attached to this appearance must involve a correct or an incorrect interpretation of its basis. It is by means of the intelligible and the sensible, 'name and appearance' (*nāmarūpa*), that which is referred to by Vāc and recognized by Manas, that Brahma, *Deus absconditus* (*brāhmaivá parārdhám agacchat*), 'returned (*pratyávait*, 'came down again', i.e. descended as *avatāra*) to these worlds which are coextensive with what can be sensed and named' (SB.XI.2. 3.3-6, cf.BU.I.4.7, S.II.101, D.II.63, 64), becoming thus, and thus 'enjoying', both what is 'real' (*satya*) and what is 'false' (*anṛta*, TU.II.6, cf.MU.VII.28. 8); it is, indeed, by a marriage of these two, *satya* and *anṛta*, affirmation (*om*) and negation (*na*), that man is propagated and multiplied (*tayor mithunāt prajāyate bhūyān bhavati*, A.A.II.3.6). Our functional existence, unlike our being, is logical and analytical, determined equally by what we are not and what we are; we distinguish subject from object and content from form.

There are, of course, 'true' and 'false' names of things; the former correspond to their essences or formative ideas and the latter to our own thinking, SB.XI.3.2.5, having in mind the latter and conventional nomenclature, remarks that of these two, 'name and appearance', the latter is the 'greater'. From this point of view it is the appearance that is 'real' and the name that is 'false'; it is not our senses but our interpretations that are at fault; we do see the glitter (cf. BU.V.14.4), but are wrong in assuming that all that glitters is gold (Arist. *Met.* IV.6.23). An ascription of 'unreality' to temporalia does not mean that

appearances to not appear, but that we are mistaken in describing them as 'things' and not simply as appearances, and misguided in trying to find out what they are instead of asking 'of what' are they the appearances (cf. ŠA.V.S=KausU.III.8); mistaken in assuming that these are the appearances of any thing, rather than of a protean no-thing 'veiled in all things' (BU.II.5.18). It is remarkable that in discussing this very question of the world Sextus Empiricus makes use of the familiar Indian parable of the snake and the rope (SB.IV.4.5.3 'snakes are like rope'), saying that the Sceptics by no means 'abolish phenomena' but only 'question whether the underlying object is such as it appears. . . our doubt does not concern the appearance itself but the account given of the appearance' (*Pyrrhonism*, I.227-8). St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on the Gospels*, of Matthew 6, 23; 'Just as men in the dark see nothing clearly, taking a rope for a serpent . . . so rich men shrink from what is in no way terrible for one who has eyes.' So also Heraclitus (*Aph.*IV and XII taken together). This is precisely the Vedantic position: the rope is not a snake, nor even 'really' a rope, but 'really' a manifestation of Brahma, 'the Real who becomes whatever there is here' (TU.II.6 and Arist. *Met.* IV.5.23 'And as concerning truth, that not every appearance is "true", we shall say first'). In the same way, as we have repeatedly pointed out, *māyā* does not mean an 'illusion' as distinct from a real phenomenon, but rather the means of creating any appearance whatever: that these worlds are *māyāmaya* does not mean that they do not 'exist', but that they are quantitative, or 'material' in the sense of the etymologically equivalent *mātrā*, 'measure', to be understood in the sense of Heraclitus XX, 'ever-living Fire, in measures (*metra*) being kindled and in measures going out' (*apοsbennumenor=nirvāta*, as applicable to fire, wind and passion); to these 'measures' of Heraclitus (cf. Plato, *Timaeus* 45 BC where vision is a part of the internal fire) correspond the *tejomātrāḥ* of BU.IV.4.1=*prāṇāgnayah* of Praśna Up.IV.3, i.e. the human elementals or 'powers of the soul'.

For *māyā*, from √*mā* and as denoting the principle of measurement and thus the means of creation see 'Nirmāṇakāya' in *JRAS* 1938, pp.81-4, and AV.XIII.2.3 and 5, *nānārūpe ahanī karṣī māyayā. . . divāṁ ca sūrya pṛthivīṁ ca devīṁ ahorātre vimimāno yad ēsi*.

27. 'We cannot speak or name correctly by speaking as we like but only by speaking in accordance with the ascertained nature of the things referred to' Plato, *Cratylus* 387.

28. ŠB.XIII.1.5.1-6 Concert of two Brāhmaṇical lute players,— one should be a Brāhmaṇa and the other a Rājanya, corresponding to *brahma+ksatra*.

29. 'This righteousness is the controller of the Kṣatriya. Therefore there is nothing higher than that'. BU.I.4.14, Svet.Up.I.12.

30. 'Became of one form' suggests the important problem, to what extent the Rājasūya endows the King with a priestly character, as in the Roman Imperial Rite in which the Emperor kneels before the Pope, who *facit eum clericum* (makes as a cleric) and mitres as well as crowns him (Wooley, R. M., *Coronation Rites*, 1915, p. 50). The problem is not an easy one, but certainly the statement by Keith that 'the connection of royalty with priestly rank, if it had ever been a motif of the growth of the kingship (in India), had long disappeared before the time of the Samhitās' (*Veda of the Black Yajus School*, cxii-cxiii), is far too sweeping. ŠB.V.1.1.12,13 'Unfit for Kingship is the Brāhmaṇa (*na vai brāhmaṇo rājyāyālam*)...Rājasūya for the king, Vājapeya for the Brāhmaṇa; former bestows kingship, latter empire'. (Nevertheless kings do perform Vājapeya). Kingship is not enough for the Brāhmaṇa, who would not desire it. It must be borne in mind, again, that the Rājasūya is an 'analogous' rite, and that every Sacrificer, being reborn of the Sacrifice, the Spiritual power (*brahma*), is born a Brāhmaṇa (*brāhmaṇa*, patronymic from *brahma*), and the initiate (*dīkṣita*) is for this reason to be addressed as a Brāhmaṇa, whatever his caste may have been (ŠB.III.2.1.40): 'the Sacrifice is the Sacerdotium (*brahma*), the Initiate is born again of the Sacrifice...he attains to Priesthood' (*brāhmaṇatām upaiti*, AB.VII.22-3, PB.V.3.10).

ŠB.I.1.4.6 'For the priest (*brāhmaṇa*) is the repeller of the Rāksasas... ', with Eggeling's note— 'Only a Brāhmaṇa can perform sacrifice. If, as is permitted in certain ceremonies, a Kshatriya or Vaisya officiates, he, as it were, becomes a Brāhmaṇa (and is addressed as such) for the occasion, by means of the *dīkṣā*, or rite of initiation'.

It is certain that Indra, the archetypal King, functions also as Priest (*brahmā*, RV.VIII.16.7, ŠB.IV.6.6.5) and as Cantor (*udgātṛ*, JUB.I.22.2), that he is a Prophet (*r̥si*, RV.VIII.6.41) and that he is constantly identified with the Sun. King Keśin (the Keśin Dārbhya of JB.II.53,54; JUB.III.29, and KB.VII.4; cf.RV.X.136) functions as the *gr̥hapati* of a *sattra* (ŠB.XL8.4.1). On the Sacrificer as *gr̥hapati* of a *sattra*, see ŠB.IV.6.8.3,5. Weber thought this a survival from a former age (*Indische Studien*, X.25,94), but this is not acceptable, since whereas formerly only Vāsiṣṭhas could function as the *brahmā* TS.III.5.2.1,

ŠB.IV.6.6.5), now anyone having the requisite knowledge can be a Brāhmaṇa and may be addressed as *Brahmā* (ŠB.IV.6.6.5, XII.6.1.10), the Brāhmaṇas and Upaniṣads thus anticipating the supposedly Buddhist distinction of the 'Brāhmaṇa by birth' (*brahma-bandhu*, CU.VI.1.1) from the Brāhmaṇa by knowledge, Brāhmaṇa as *brahmavīt*. We learn, too, that 'formerly, an inveterated king aspersed his own son' (Comm.on ŠB.XIII.8.3.19 where 'the kṣatriyu asperses the kṣatriya', cf. Mbh.I.69.44, Poona ed., where *Dusyanta bharatam... yauvanārājye' bhyāsecayat*), a practice that seems to have survived in Siam in connection with the very important rite of the Tonsure of the Heir-apparent in which the King, impersonating Śiva, 'poured the contents of the great chank shell upon the head of the prince' (H.G.Quaritch Wales, *Siamese State Ceremonies*, 1931, p. 130). Cf.AB.VIII.13 where Indra is anointed by Prajāpati, and LS.p.100 where Buddhas asperse (*abhisic*) Bodhisattvas with their own hands.

In the *Mahā-Govinda-sutta* the King himself asperses the Purohita (D.II.232); and it was probably by an aspersion that the King exercised his own powers of 'quicken'ing' (*sava*), when he bestowed accession honours on the eleven members of his court (*senānī*, *purohita*, *mahiśī* etc.) who are called the 'Recipients of Decorations' (*ratnīnah*, ŠB.V.3.1.12, —not to be confused with the 'Seven Jewels', *sapta ratnā*, of a Cakravartin, RV.V.1.5, VI.74.1, BD.V.123, although the categories partly coincide). Hocart points out that the 'quicken'ing' of the Ratnīns is a ritual deification: it will be observed that excepting the Queen there are ten male Ratnīns, and these with the King himself are presumably the 'eleven Gods on earth' of RV.I.139.11.

Furthermore, in the Act of Homage, the King is addressed as *Brahmā* and identified with Savitṛ, Indra, Mitra and Varuṇa, i.e. priestly as well as royal deities, the Brahman taking a seat below him (TS.III.5.2.1, ŠB.IV.6.6.5, BU.1.4.11): while according to Manu (VII.2 f.) a Kṣatriya who has duly received the 'sacerdotal sacrament' (*brāhmam... saṃskāram*), i.e. has been initiated and asperged, is a substance compounded in some measure of Indra, Anila (Vāyu), Yama, Arka (Sun), Agni, Varuṇa, Candra (Moon), and Vitteśa (Kubera), and is like the burning sun, so that 'no one on earth can look at him who is a great God in human form' (*mahatī devatā... naranīpena*). Manu IX.303-12 shows in what way a King exercises analogous functions.

On the other hand PB.XVIII.10.8 expressly reserves the Sacerdotium from the Regnum, and innumerable texts sharply distinguish the

28. ŠB.XIII.1.5.1-6 Concert of two Brāhmaṇical lute players,—one should be a Brāhmaṇa and the other a Rājanya, corresponding to *brahma+kṣatra*.

29. 'This righteousness is the controller of the Kṣatriya. Therefore there is nothing higher than that'. BU.I.4.14, Svet.Up.I.12.

30. 'Became of one form' suggests the important problem, to what extent the Rājasūya endows the King with a priestly character, as in the Roman Imperial Rite in which the Emperor kneels before the Pope, who *facit eum clericum* (makes as a cleric) and mitres as well as crowns him (Wooley, R. M., *Coronation Rites*, 1915, p. 50). The problem is not an easy one, but certainly the statement by Keith that 'the connection of royalty with priestly rank, if it had ever been a motif of the growth of the kingship (in India), had long disappeared before the time of the Saṁhitās' (*Veda of the Black Yajus School*, cxii-cxiii), is far too sweeping. ŠB.V.1.1.12,13 'Unfit for Kingship is the Brāhmaṇa (*na vai brāhmaṇo rājyāyālam*)...Rājasūya for the king, Vājapeya for the Brāhmaṇa; former bestows kingship, latter empire'. (Nevertheless kings do perform Vājapeya). Kingship is not enough for the Brāhmaṇa, who would not desire it. It must be borne in mind, again, that the Rājasūya is an 'analogous' rite, and that every Sacrificer, being reborn of the Sacrifice, the Spiritual power (*brahma*), is born a Brāhmaṇa (*brāhmaṇa*, patronymic from *brahma*), and the initiate (*dīkṣita*) is for this reason to be addressed as a Brāhmaṇa, whatever his caste may have been (ŠB.III.2.1.40): 'the Sacrifice is the Sacerdotium (*brahma*), the Initiate is born again of the Sacrifice...he attains to Priesthood' (*brāhmaṇatām upaiti*, AB.VII.22-3, PB.V.3.10).

SB.I.1.4.6 'For the priest (*brāhmaṇa*) is the repeller of the Rākṣasas... ', with Eggeling's note— 'Only a Brāhmaṇa can perform sacrifice. If, as is permitted in certain ceremonies, a Kshatriya or Vaisya officiates, he, as it were, becomes a Brāhmaṇa (and is addressed as such) for the occasion, by means of the *dīkṣā*, or rite of initiation'.

It is certain that Indra, the archetypal King, functions also as Priest (*brahmā*, RV.VIII.16.7, ŠB.IV.6.6.5) and as Cantor (*udgātṛ*, JUB.I.22.2), that he is a Prophet (*r̥ṣi*, RV.VIII.6.41) and that he is constantly identified with the Sun. King Keśin (the Keśin Dārbhya of JB.II.53,54; JUB.III.29, and KB.VII.4; cf.RV.X.136) functions as the *gr̥hapatī* of a *sattrā* (ŠB.XI.8.4.1). On the Sacrificer as *gr̥hapatī* of a *sattrā*, see ŠB.IV.6.8.3,5. Weber thought this a survival from a former age (*Indische Studien*, X.25,94), but this is not acceptable, since whereas formerly only Vāsiṣṭhas could function as the *brahmā* TS.III.5.2.1,

ŠB.IV.6.6.5), now anyone having the requisite knowledge can be a Brāhmaṇa and may be addressed as *Brahmā* (ŠB.IV.6.6.5, XII.6.1.10), the Brāhmaṇas and Upaniṣads thus anticipating the supposedly Buddhist distinction of the 'Brāhmaṇa by birth' (*brahma-bandhu*, CU.VI.1.1) from the Brāhmaṇa by knowledge, Brāhmaṇa as *brahmavit*. We learn, too, that 'formerly, an inveterated king aspersed his own son' (Comm.on ŠB.XIII.8.3.19 where 'the kṣatriya asperses the kṣatriya', cf. Mbh.I.69.44, Poona ed., where Duṣyanta *bharatam... yauvarājye' bhyaṣecayat*), a practice that seems to have survived in Siam in connection with the very important rite of the Tonsure of the Heir-apparent in which the King, impersonating Śiva, 'poured the contents of the great chank shell upon the head of the prince' (H.G.Quaritch Wales, *Siamese State Ceremonies*, 1931, p. 130), Cf.AB.VIII.13 where Indra is anointed by Prajāpati, and LS.p.100 where Buddhas asperse (*abhisic*) Bodhisattvas with their own hands.

In the *Mahā-Govinda-sutta* the King himself asperses the *Purohita* (D.II.232); and it was probably by an aspersion that the King exercised his own powers of 'quicken'ing' (*sava*), when he bestowed accession honours on the eleven members of his court (*senānī*, *purohita*, *mahiṣī* etc.) who are called the 'Recipients of Decorations' (*ratnīnāḥ*, ŠB.V.3.1.12,—not to be confused with the 'Seven Jewels', *sapta ratnā*, of a Cakravartin, RV.V.1.5, VI.74.1, BD.V.123, although the categories partly coincide). Hocart points out that the 'quicken'ing' of the Ratnins is a ritual deification: it will be observed that excepting the Queen there are ten male Ratnins, and these with the King himself are presumably the 'eleven Gods on earth' of RV.I.139.11.

Furthermore, in the Act of Homage, the King is addressed as *Brahmā* and identified with Savitṛ, Indra, Mitra and Varuṇa, i.e. priestly as well as royal deities, the Brahman taking a seat below him (TS.III.5.2.1, ŠB.IV.6.6.5, BU.I.4.11): while according to Manu (VII.2 f.) a Kṣatriya who has duly received the 'sacerdotal sacrament' (*brāhmam... saṁskāram*), i.e. has been initiated and asperged, is a substance compounded in some measure of Indra, Anila (Vāyu), Yama, Arka (Sun), Agni, Varuṇa, Candra (Moon), and Vitteśa (Kubera), and is like the burning sun, so that 'no one on earth can look at him who is a great God in human form' (*mahatī devatā... naranūpena*). Manu IX.303-12 shows in what way a King exercises analogous functions.

On the other hand PB.XVIII.10.8 expressly reserves the Sacerdotium from the Regnum, and innumerable texts sharply distinguish the

Sacerdotal from the Royal functions; it is much rather the Sacerdotium that exercises both (Bṛhaspati as fighting priest, RV. *passim*), than the Regnum. It is evident that the installation of a King does not dispense with his or the kingdom's need of a priesthood. That the King is the Sacrificer (*yajamāna*) and Lord of the Sacrifice (*yajñapati*) does not mean that he normally performs or conducts the rite, but that he is the patron who institutes, pays for and defends the Sacrifice on behalf of his people. He is 'the Supporter of Rites' (*dhṛtavrata*), and as such he may not say or do anything or everything, but only what is correct (*sādhu*); he and the Śrotriya (indoctrinated Brāhmaṇa) are the two 'Supporters of the Rite' (*dhṛtāvratau*, SB. V.4.4.5). Indra is typically *vratapā*, 'Fidei Defensor'; cf. RV.X.61.7 where 'the effective gods produced the Sacerdotium (*brāhma*), and made the Land's Lord (*vāstospátim*), the Guardian of the Rite (*vratapām*). Cf. RV.II.13.5, where 'generated Indra with lauds and waters' refers to his birth from the Sacrifice in the Rājasūya.

The difficulties are best resolved by recalling that the Priesthood and the Kingship correspond to Sky and Earth, who were originally One, but departed from one another as soon as their unity had been consummated (RV. *passim*, TS.V.1.5.8, V.2.4.1, BU.III.8.9, etc.). In the same way the King is assimilated to and identified with the Priest (as Arjuna is sometimes identified with Kṛṣṇa in Mbh.) for the duration of the nuptial Sacrifice, but, just as in any other Sacrifice, 'becomes again what he really is' when the rite is relinquished, thus returning from divinity to humanity, *satya* to *anṛta* (VS.I.5 and II.28, SB.I.1.1.4-6, I.9.3.23, III.6.3.21, III.9.4.1, IX.5.I.12). It is, in fact, explicit, that having put off his Royalty and become a Brāhmaṇa, the King in turn abandons this Priestly character: 'when he concludes, he assumes his Kṣatriya character, calling to witness Agni, Vāyu, and Āditya (the cosmic Purohitas) that 'Now I am he who I am' (AB.VII.22): It is then 'not actually and evidently' (*na... pratyakṣam*) but only symbolically and in an occult manner (*parokṣam*) that 'the Kṣatriya assumes the form of the Sacerdotium' (*brahmaṇo rūpam upanigacchati*) and therefore only transubstantially that he can partake of Soma (AB.VII.31); cf. JUB.I.40.3, where, notwithstanding that the Voice (*vāc*) is the indispensable support of the Sāman, 'It is by no means by the Voice that the priestly office is performed, but in an occult way' (*parokṣena*), i.e. mentally, in accordance with the injunction *yájadhvā... mánasā*, RV.VIII.2.37, cf. TS.VI.I.4.5, KB.VII.4. In any case, that the King does assume the Sacerdotal

character, however temporarily and in whatever manner, makes it impossible to say that 'the connection of royalty with priestly rank had long disappeared.' All we can say is that hardly any trace of any actual exercise of Brāhmaṇical functions survives in the Brāhmaṇas.

Just as the King assumes a Priestly character which he again relinquishes, so 'In that he is aspersed (*abhiṣicyate*) in the Rājasūya, he ascends to the world of heaven, (but) if he did not descend again he would either depart thither beyond human beings (i.e. he would die) or would go mad' (PB.XVIII.10.10), a condition of equal application to any other Sacrificer (TS.VII.3.10.3, VII.4.4.2, AB.IV.21, etc.); the ritual deification which prefigures an effective deification *post mortem*—cf. Harṣacarita 215, *devabhūyam gate narendre*, 'Now that the King has assumed his Godhead'. i.e. has died, and the representation of Kings as deities in funerary chapels—would be presently fatal, as is indeed implied by the rule: 'No one becomes immortal in the flesh' SB.X.4.3.9). The royal Sacrificer's Himmelfahrt is nevertheless of profound significance: for the descent, a sort of *avataraṇa* comparable to the Buddha's at Saṅkīsa, and to Plato's return of the Philosopher to the Cave, is 'by that stairway which, save to reascend, no one descendeth' (Dante, *Paradiso*, X.86-7). It cannot be wondered at that in D.II.227, where Brahmā Sanat kumāra ('The Eternal Youth', i.e. Agni-Bṛhaspati, *devānām brahmā*, cf. AV.X.8.44 *ātmānam dhīram ajāram yuvānam*) appears in the Tāvatīrṇa heaven amongst the Thirty-three Devas beside whom he takes his seat (and with whom he thus 'consorts'), each of them experiences a beatitude which is compared to that of 'a Kṣatriya King whose head has been aspersed (*muddhāvasitto*,—aspersion beginning from the head, SB.IX.4.1.15, etc.) and who as soon as he has been aspersed (*adhunābhisitto*) experiences a sublime enthusiasm and sublime contentment': for the King's relation to his human *brahmā* is precisely that of the several Devas to their common Brahmā, cf. note 4. That the Regnum is only temporarily set above the Sacerdotium in the Act of Homage (TS.I.6.16 and SB.V.4.4.9-13) is also apparent from BU.I.4.11, where we are told that the Sacerdotium was one simply in the beginning, and as such did not manifest omnipotence (*vibhu* and *tadekam sanna vyabhavat*, with implication of *vibhava* in the sense of 'dominion', cf. note 41 and *vibhūti* in BG.X.40). That (One) manifested a more resplendent form (*śreyo rūpam*, cf. RV.X.31.2 *śreyānsam daksam*, 'power and glory'), that of the Regnum, even the Devas who are Dominions (*kṣatrāṇi*, cf. TS.II.3.1.4 *vānuṇam vai rāṣṭram*), viz.

Indra, Varuṇa, Soma, Rudra, Parjanya, Yama, Mṛtyu, Isāna. (with some changes of name, this octad is doubtless to be identified with the octad of king-making deities mentioned in Note 14.)

There is, accordingly, nothing above the Regnum (BU.I.4.11 *kṣatrāt param nāsti*): in the Rājasūya the Brāhmaṇa pays homage to the Kṣatriya from a lower position; he expressly glorifies the Regnum (*kṣatra eva tad yaśo dadhāti*). But the Sacerdotium is the source of the Regnum, so that even though a ruling King attains supremacy (*paramatām*, like Varuṇa's in SB.V.3.3.9), he finally (*antatas*, i.e. when the Rājasūya is ended) leans upon (*upaniśrayati*) the Sacerdotium as his source, and if he (the King) injures him (the Brāhmaṇa), he is striking at his own source, and he becomes the worse (*pāpiyān bhavati*), having injured his superior' (*śreyānsam*). For *brahma* as the source of *kṣatra*, see AV.X.2. 22, 23 and XV.10.3. Śaṅkara is clearly right in saying that the 'glory' and 'supremacy' are references to the Act of Homage at the enthronement, but that when the rite is relinquished it is the King who gives precedence' to the Purohita, whose designation itself purports 'Praepositus' (Gr. πρότος proitos, *Praeitor*= Spartan Zeus, 'Αγγήτωρ *hagētor*, *Agetōr*).

Texts, of course, abound, in which the relative inferiority of the King to the Priest is affirmed (*rājyam sāmrāj* SB.V.1.1.12). The Brāhmaṇas are not his subjects, 'their King is Soma' (the Sacrificer has Soma for King, AB.I.14, SB.V.4.2.3, TS.1.8.10d); everything here is 'food' for the King, but he himself is 'food' for the Brāhmaṇas (SB.V.4.2.3, Sn.619; Kauś. Up. II.9); Soma's throne is borne by four men, but the human King's only by two, since Soma rules absolutely all (*asya sakṛt sarvasreste*) but not so the other (SB.III.3.4.26); the Brāhmaṇas are not committed to the Kṣatra, whose 'rod' (*danda*) is not for them, while they on the other hand have a 'counter-rod' (*pratidanda*) that can be used against him or any of his subjects (PB.XVIII.10.8), i.e the power of the curse or excommunication, the case of Nahuṣa, who was for a time the King of the Gods, providing an example (Hopkins, *Epic Mythology*, p. 130). See Fig.111— 'The kingly diadem, the symbol not of absolute sovereignty but of an admirable viceroyalty'; and 'The Bishops are superior in that they consecrate kings, but cannot be consecrated by them' (Letter of Hincmar, Archbishop of Rheims, to Charles the Bald, AD 868).

That the King is inferior in hierarchy to the Priest is emphasized by Oldenberg (*Die Religion des Veda*, 1894, pp.375, 376) and by Weber (*Indische Studien*, X. 160 and 'Über den Rājasūya'. *Königliche Akademis-*

che Wissenschaft, Phil.-Hist. Köln, 1893, p.118). See Philostratus III.10.

Oldenberg (p. 376) speaks of the 'sacerdotal prestige which far exceeded weakly developed royal individualities,' while Weber ('Rājasūya', remarks that 'the sharp emphasis on the subordination of the king, which is evident throughout the whole of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, is absent in the Epics', and refers to the absolute necessity for a king to have a Purohita (=domestic chaplain)—otherwise the gods will not accept his offerings—and to be submissive and obedient to him.' See Note 56 and SB.XI.4.2.17–18, XI.5.3.9 on *Gṛhapatī*. Weber's 'absent in the Epics' reminds us that the Temporal Power in India, as in Europe, gradually freed itself from its originally legitimate status of agent (*kartrī*) of the Spiritual Authority, and that as remarked by Rhys Davids in *Dialogues* 2.267, note 1, with reference to the position of the King as described in the Mahā-Govinda-Sutta, 'a king was of lower rank then than now.' This last is the same as it would be to say that Satan was of lower rank before his fall than after the assertion of his independence. How different from our own are the traditional values of feudalism may be seen in the fact that the slave was once regarded as the superior of the hired man: a colleague of mine, while living in Persia remarked to a messenger, 'I suppose you are the Sheikh's servant,' and received the proud answer, 'No sir, I am his slave.' We have learnt to confuse servility with loyalty and rebellion with freedom. ('For the slave is a partner in his master's life, but the artisan is more remote.' Aristotle, *Pol.* I.5.10). In fact, 'Hereditary service (serfdom) is entirely incompatible with modern industrialism, and that is why it is always painted in such dark colours' (A.M. Hocart, *Les Castes*, 1938, p.238, [italics mine], and 'We must not be misled by the European equivalents for some Indian words', p. 70).

Vrata is 'operation' (*vratam iti karma nāma*, Sāyaṇa on RV.X.57.6) and like *karma* with primary reference to sacrificial operation (cf. Lat. *operari = sacra facere*) as is explicit in SB.I.1.1.1. and I.9.3.23 where *vrata* = *yajña*. Operation is twofold, 'interior' (*guhya*) and 'exterior' (*dvir*). These two 'operations' are essentially those of the Sacerdotium and the Regnum *in divinis*. As That One the deity is 'idle' (*avrata*, cf. nā . . . *vyābhavat* in BU.I.4.11, and *apravartin* CU.III.12.9 and Kauś U. IV.8), or, as this is expressed in TS.I.5.9.5, 'The operations are mingled at night, the better and the worse lie down together' (*sām hi nāktam vratāni srjyāntc, sahā śreyāns ca pāpiyāns cāsāte*) but when 'proceeding to the sacrificial part' (*yajñiyam bhāgām emi*, RV.X.124.3) 'supremely operative' (*vratatama*, RV.VIII.44.21).

Indra, Varuṇa, Soma, Rudra, Parjanya, Yama, Mṛtyu, Isāna. (with some changes of name, this octad is doubtless to be identified with the octad of king-making deities mentioned in Note 14.)

There is, accordingly, nothing above the Regnum (BU.I.4.11 *kṣatrāt param nāsti*): in the Rājasūya the Brāhmaṇa pays homage to the Kṣatriya from a lower position; he expressly glorifies the Regnum (*kṣatra eva tad yaśo dadhāti*). But the Sacerdotium is the source of the Regnum, so that even though a ruling King attains supremacy (*paramatām*, like Varuṇa's in ŚB.V.3.3.9), he finally (*antatas*, i.e. when the Rājasūya is ended) leans upon (*upaniśrayati*) the Sacerdotium as his source, and if he (the King) injures him (the Brāhmaṇa), he is striking at his own source, and he becomes the worse (*pāpiyān bhavati*), having injured his superior' (*śreyānsam*). For *brahma* as the source of *kṣatra*, see AV.X.2. 22, 23 and XV.10.3. Śaṅkara is clearly right in saying that the 'glory' and 'supremacy' are references to the Act of Homage at the enthronement, but that when the rite is relinquished it is the King who gives precedence' to the Purohita, whose designation itself purports 'Praepositus' (Gr. πρότος proitos, Praeitor= Spartan Zeùs, 'Αγγήτωρ hagētor, Agetōr).

Texts, of course, abound, in which the relative inferiority of the King to the Priest is affirmed (*rājyam sāmrāj* ŚB.V.1.1.12). The Brāhmaṇas are not his subjects, 'their King is Soma' (the Sacrificer has Soma for King, AB.I.14, ŚB.V.4.2.3, TS.1.8.10d); everything here is 'food' for the King, but he himself is 'food' for the Brāhmaṇas (ŚB.V.4.2.3, Sn.619; Kauṣ. Up.II.9); Soma's throne is borne by four men, but the human King's only by two, since Soma rules absolutely all (*asya sakṛt sarvasreṣṭe*) but not so the other (ŚB.III.3.4.26); the Brāhmaṇas are not committed to the Kṣatra, whose 'rod' (*dāṇḍa*) is not for them, while they on the other hand have a 'counter-rod' (*pratidāṇḍa*) that can be used against him or any of his subjects (PB.XVIII.10.8), i.e the power of the curse or excommunication, the case of Nahuṣa, who was for a time the King of the Gods, providing an example (Hopkins, *Epic Mythology*, p. 130). See *Fug.111*— 'The kingly diadem, the symbol not of absolute sovereignty but of an admirable viceroyalty'; and 'The Bishops are superior in that they consecrate kings, but cannot be consecrated by them' (Letter of Hincmar, Archbishop of Rheims, to Charles the Bald, AD 868).

That the King is inferior in hierarchy to the Priest is emphasized by Oldenberg (*Die Religion des Veda*, 1894, pp.375, 376) and by Weber (*Indische Studien*, X. 160 and 'Über den Rājasūya'. *Königliche Akademie-*

der Wissenschaft, Phil.-Hist. Köln, 1893, p.118). See Philostratus III.10.

Oldenberg (p. 376) speaks of the 'sacerdotal prestige which far exceeded weakly developed royal individualities,' while Weber ('Rājasūya', remarks that 'the sharp emphasis on the subordination of the king, which is evident throughout the whole of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, is absent in the Epics', and refers to the absolute necessity for a king to have a Purohita (=domestic chaplain)—otherwise the gods will not accept his offerings—and to be submissive and obedient to him.' See Note 56 and ŚB.XI.4.2.17–18, XI.5.3.9 on *Gṛhapati*. Weber's 'absent in the Epics' reminds us that the Temporal Power in India, as in Europe, gradually freed itself from its originally legitimate status of agent (*kartṛ*) of the Spiritual Authority, and that as remarked by Rhys Davids in *Dialogues* 2.267, note 1, with reference to the position of the King as described in the Mahā-Govinda-Sutta, 'a king was of lower rank then than now.' This last is the same as it would be to say that Satan was of lower rank before his fall than after the assertion of his independence. How different from our own are the traditional values of feudalism may be seen in the fact that the slave was once regarded as the superior of the hired man: a colleague of mine, while living in Persia remarked to a messenger, 'I suppose you are the Sheikh's servant,' and received the proud answer, 'No sir, I am his slave.' We have learnt to confuse servility with loyalty and rebellion with freedom. ('For the slave is a partner in his master's life, but the artisan is more remote.' Aristotle, *Pol.* 1.5.10). In fact, 'Hereditary service (serfdom) is entirely incompatible with modern industrialism, and that is why it is always painted in such dark colours' (A.M. Hocart, *Les Castes*, 1938, p.238, [italics mine], and 'We must not be misled by the European equivalents for some Indian words', p. 70).

Vrata is 'operation' (*vratam iti karma nāma*, Sāyaṇa on RV.X.57.6) and like *karma* with primary reference to sacrificial operation (cf. Lat. *operari* = *sacra facere*) as is explicit in ŚB.I.1.1.1. and I.9.3.23 where *vrata* = *yajña*. Operation is twofold, 'interior' (*guhya*) and 'exterior' (*dvir*). These two 'operations' are essentially those of the Sacerdotium and the Regnum *in divinis*. As That One the deity is 'idle' (*avrata*, cf. nā . . . *vyābhavat* in BU.I.4.11, and *apravartin* CU.III.12.9 and *Kauṣ U.* IV.8), or, as this is expressed in TS.I.5.9.5, 'The operations are mingled at night, the better and the worse lie down together' (*sām hi nāktam vratāmi srjyāntc, sahā śreyāns ca pāpiyāns cāsāte*) but when 'proceeding to the sacrificial part' (*yajñiyam bhāgām emi*, RV.X.124.3) 'supremely operative' (*vratatama*, RV.VIII.44.21).

Vrātya implies the potentiality of operation. (JB.II.233 *soman*) Brahman, the *brahma*, is then the 'One and only Vrātya,' the source of the *brahma* and *kṣatra* proper to Br̥haspati and Indra, who becomes the Lord, (*īśāna* on whom all beings attend, and arming himself with Indra's bow 'covers up the hostile brotherhood' (*dpriyam bhrātrvyanam*) and 'pierces him who hates' (*dviśantam*), AV.XV. 1.5-6, XV.3.10, XV.10.3-6, cf. IV.1.3. Otherwise stated, the 'only Vrātya is Vāyu,' is the Gale of the Spirit it that blows from the four quarters as the Kings Indra, Iśana, Varuṇa and Soma and from above as Prajāpati (JUB.III.21.3); or Prāṇa-Prajāpati, the Breath (*Praśna* U. II.7). Thus the unmanifested Brahman enters into the worlds as Priest and King, as Agni-Br̥haspati and Indra; he is the archetypal 'Guest' and King whom his satellites welcome with the cry 'Here comes Brahman!' (BU.IV.3.37). His welcome is a kind of Rājasūya. It is natural, then, that the throne (*āsandī*) prepared for the Vrātya in AV.XV.3 should resemble Brahman's in Kauṣ. U.1.5 and Indra's in AB.VIII.12, and likewise the Buddha's throne in the early iconography, for all these are 'Guests' to be welcomed as Kings.

Vratya in the plural is, then, by analogy an epithet that can be applied to any Brāhmaṇa considered as a manifestation of Brahman, or equally to any alien guest who is qualified by nature to be received into the Aryan fold and inducted into the Aryan operations (*āryā vratā*, RV.X.65.11): we see that for the Aryan householder or King to address the stranger as a 'Vrātya' (AV.XV.10.1-2, 11. 1-2, 12, 1-2) is to pay him the highest honour and to say in effect: 'We are altogether your servants.' Thus the tradition of hospitality is based on metaphysical principles, hospitality is a rite, the guest is a living symbol of the deity (Brahma=Guest). It becomes understandable, also, why it is that a guest may be feared as well as honored: it is an enemy that comes to be received as a friend, a Varuṇa whom one receives as a Mitra; the 'welcome' is in any case a 'pacification' (*śānti*; from *śam*) and is a 'quieting' analogous to that of the *śamitṛ* who gives the quietus to the sacrificial victim,—it should not be overlooked that the proceeding deity is, in fact, himself the Sacrifice (RV.X.13.4, X.81.5, SB. *passim*, etc.). This is especially clear in KU.I.7 where the Brāhmaṇa guest is called a 'Fire' and *tasya . . . śāntim* refers at the same time to the extinction of the 'Fire' and the pacification of the 'Guest,' as in TS.V.I.6.1 where 'the waters are pacifications, and with these pacifications he quiets Agni's burning anguish' (*āpo vai śāntāḥ, śāntābhīr evāsyā śucām śamayati, śucam* corresponding to the 'sharpness of the

'fire-flash' contrasted with the 'meekness and light' in Behmen, *Three Principles*, XIV.69-77); cf. the extinction or pacification (*śānti*) of the Fire in PB.VIII.7.8, and the value of *santi* in Pali Buddhism where the extinction or pacification of the fire of life is the same as Nibbāna. *Samśām* in Mbh. is both to 'kill' and to 'make peace with,' since in 'making peace' we put an end to the enemy and generate a friend; it is logically impossible to make 'peace with an enemy,' whom like Varuṇa we can only approach when we have 'made him a friend' (*mitrakṛtya*), and this passage from enmity to friendship (cf. the double entendre of *hostis*), like all other transitions, is the death of what was and a birth of what is. In BG.VI.7 where the empirical self has been 'overcome and pacified' (*jita praśānta*), *praśānta* has all the values of 'sacrificed,' 'made sacred,' 'made holy,' as in the ritual Sacrifice itself, where the Sacrificer is identified with the victim and called a 'self-sacrificer' (*ātmayāji*, SB.XI.2.6.13, cf.I.8.3.18, etc., and Manu, XII.91).

This digression has been necessary to an understanding of *vrata*, a word that can only be rendered correctly by 'operation,' and equated with *karma*; it should be added that all occupations are traditionally sacrificial rites, cf. RV.IX.112. I.2 where the vocations of the priest, the carpenter, doctor, and fletcher are all equally *vratāni*. We can now understand the full meaning of *samvratā* which is quite literally that of 'cooperative', and that of *pativratā*, a 'devoted wife'; to use a later word, the 'wife', the 'royal' partner, is to act as *sahadharmini*, a partner in the fulfilment of the Eternal Law, which as *svadharma* becomes the Law of one's own Vocation; the analogous *ānuvaratā* in AV.XIV.1.42, TS.I.1.10, and JUB.I.54.6, and implied in the *Arthaśāstra* I, adhy. 9, "The King should obey (*anuvarteta*, i.e. should be *anuvrata* with respect to) the Purohita, as is a pupil to his master, a son to a father, or a serf to his feudal lord" (*svami*), and as might have been added, as is a wife to a husband whom she should "love, honor, and obey." Contrasted with these cooperations, the alternative of other and independent operation (*anyavrata*) would be satanic (RV.X.22.8, VS. XXXVIII.20), cf. AB.II.5, AV.V.18.8, 9, where "instigated by the Mind the Voice speaks (*manasā vā iṣṭā vāg vadati*), but what she utters absent mindedly is of the Asuras and not acceptable to the Gods' (*yām hy anyamanā vācam vadati asuryā vai sā vāg adevajauṣṭā*; the 'Mind' here being the sacrificial Maitrāvaraṇa, i.e. the *brahmā*, and the "Voice" the *hotṛ*, functionally feminine).

32. AV.III.8.5 *sam vo manāsi sam vrata*; TB.II.4.4.4-5 *sangachhadhvam*

samivadadhvam. sam vo manāgur̄si jānātām. devā bhāgam yathā pūrve.
Samjānānā upāsata. samāno mantrah samitih samānī samānam manah saha
cittamesām. samānam ketō abhi samrabhadhvam. samjānānenā vo havisā
yajāmah. samānī va ākūtiḥ samānā hrdayānī vah samānamastu vo manah
yathā vah susahāsatī. See also RV.X.191.2-4, X.65.8, TS.IV.2.5.1,
AV.VI.64.1-3.

33. That the marriage of the two Agnis, *kṣatra* and *brahma*, in TS.V.2.4 is a union of mutually antagonistic principles, reflects the natural opposition of Sacerdotium and Regnum and natural antagonism of the sexes. What pertains to Mitra does not pertain to Varuṇa (SB.III.4.18): 'The *kṣatra* takes no delight in the *brahma*, nor does the *brahmavarcasa* delight in the *kṣatra*' (SB.XIII.1.5.2, 3); *amoris sive dilectionis radix et causa est similitudo* (Ecclesiasticus XIII.19), and as Eckhart adds, *E converso vero dissimilitudo est causa odii.* [=The root and cause of love is likeness. Conversely indeed, unlikeness is the cause of hatred.] The nature and functions of the Sacerdotium and the Regnum, like those of man and woman, are distinct: the marriage is a reconciliation that reflects their transcendental unity ('Agni is both Mitra and Varuṇa', RV.VII.12.3; 'Brahma both *brahma* and *kṣatra*', SB.X.4.1.9; Christ 'both King and Priest', St. Thomas Aquinas, *Sum. Theol.* III.31.2 ad 2).

That is so many of the oldest languages the same roots embrace opposite meanings (which must be only distinguishable by the addition of determinants) is of fundamental significance for the ontology of thought. It is an indication that the movement of primitive thought deduces qualities; it is not abstractive but deductive,—an indication of number. All that is essential for the adequacy of the symbolism is the mutual contrariety of related forms which are essentially of one kind, but can be divided for practical purposes. A good example of this 'open sesame' motif can be cited from Southern Africa. The same synthetic bias is to be recognized in the old duals (e.g. *Mitrāvaruṇau*) that import, not a mere composition of two 'persons' but the becoming of one.

The very word *mithunam* implies a 'clash' of contraries, and *mithyā* is 'false' as being contrary (to the truth). For the marriage of mutually antagonistic principles cf. AV.III.8.5 'I bend together your minds, operations and intentions, ye who are of contrasted operation, these of yours I bend together' (*sam vo manānsi sam vratā sam ākutīr namāmasi, amī ye vivratā sthana tān vah sam namayāmasi*). This is primarily, no doubt, addressed to Sky and Earth; in a hymn 'for supremacy'

(*śraisthye*) it would be applicable to the analogous *brahma* and *kṣatra*. The wording is closely related also to that of TS.IV.2.5.1 and RV.X.65.8 and X.191.2-4.

At the same time the kindling of Agni is the quickening and resurrection of Varuṇa: Agni becomes 'his father's augmenter' (*vardhanam pituḥ*, RV.I.140.3 and thus his 'father's father', *pitus pītā*, RV.VI.16.35), the Son reproducing the Father whom he displaces. The two Agnis of our texts are the one that 'falls' (dies) with Soma and Varuṇa (=Cyavāna) in RV.X.124 (*agnih sōmo vārunas tē cyavante*) and the one proceeding as God (*devāḥ*) from the No-god (*ādevāt*, i.e. from the *asura* *pīṭṛ*, now *Deus absconditus*, *mūra deva*, like Prajāpati, *jiryā mūrah* in PB.XXV.17.3) from the non-sacrificial to the sacrificial part (*ayajñiyād yajñiyam bhāgām emī*) and who with a view to immortality (*prapāśyamāno amṛtatvām*) abandons (*jāhāmī*) the Titan Father, choosing (*vṛṇiānāḥ*) Indra; cf. RV.IV.26.7 where Indra abandons (*ajahāt*) the senile deities (*mūrah*, sc. *devāḥ*), VI.47.17 where Indra rejects his former friends, who do not follow him, and seeks others, VI.59.1, 'Your parents, foes of the Gods, *Indrāgnī*, are smitten down, and ye survive,' and X.69.10 where Agni, the Youngest, vanquishes the Ancients, though they were friendly. The abandonment of the Father by *Indrāgnī* corresponds to that of Cyavāna in JB.III.77. The reversal of the kingdom (*parvārd rāṣṭrām*) in RV.X.124 is reflected in TS.VI.6.5 where Varuṇa is the type of the banished king and Indra that of the one in power, and the offering is to free oneself from what pertains to Varuṇa, for as in RV.X.124.8 'the people who elect a King stand aloof in horror from Vṛtra' (*vīśo nā rájānāḥ vṛṇānd bibhatsūvo ápa vṛtrād atiṣṭhan*), incidentally an interesting reference to the part of the people in the choice of the King: that the reference of 'Vṛtra' here is to a nature from which as regards its evil the King is to be purged, but which as regards its force is to remain in him (just as the gods retain the *ahimāyāḥ* of the Asuras), can be seen from PB.XVI.4.1-5 and XVIII.9.6,7, where Indra puts on the lotus-wreath (*puṣkarasraja*) which his father Prajāpati (i.e. Varuṇa now succeeded by his son) had had made for himself 'for the sake of supremacy' (*śresthyād*)—it is 'wrought of the savor of the quarters and all his offspring,' its twelve flowers are the months, it is the 'royal force' (*indriyām viryam*) of the Year, Prajāpati, Varuṇa—and 'when he put on the lotus wreath, it is the Regnum, the very form (or aspect) of Vṛtra, that he puts on' (*vṛtrasyaiva tad nīpam kṣatram pratimūñcate*), that Vṛtra whom, as we are reminded in the same verse, he has already slain. Similarly MS.IV.4.7

where the lotus (wreath) is 'the very form of the Regnum' (*kṣatrasyaiva rūpam*); and ŚB.V.4.5.4 where the lotus wreath is 'the form of the sky' (*divo rūpam*). The conclusion, *Vṛtra=Dyaus=Kṣatra*, will not astonish us. The Dragonslayer assimilates the Dragon's power but not his malice, and inherits his treasure, so that *Vṛtra* says to Indra: 'Thou art now what I was erst' (ŚB.I.6.3.17).

Thus indeed Indra 'supersedes' the father (Varuṇa, Dyaus, Prajāpati, or *Vṛtra*) whom he has overcome or more strictly speaking 'sacrificed'; the pseudo-historial legend of his namesake Ajātaśatru is another recension of the same story. But to think of this 'supersession of Varuṇa by Indra' as the reflection of some doctrinal 'evolution,' or even to say that 'Varuṇa was divested of his supreme powers by the time of the AV' (Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, pp. 65, 66) is a misapplication of 'historical method' and only displays the mythologist's ignorance of theology. For *Indrāgnī* are liberators above all else: they bring forth their people from captivity into a promised land. And every suchsoteriology necessarily transfers the Kingdom, whether by conquest or by a sacrificial atonement, from a 'wrathful Father' to a milder Son, from the God *ab intra* to the God *ab extra*, in so far as a distinction can be made between them. So Christ says: 'All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth' (Matth. XXVIII.18). What is true for the *genealogia regni dei* is true in every human lineage; the Prince who comes to the throne 'supersedes' his father (whether he has been ritually 'despatched' or has died by natural causes) and inherits his power (ŚB.V.4.2.10), but establishes a new order. In this connection it is highly significant that one of the first acts of a new King, celebrating his accession, is a release of prisoners from jail. It is thus that Varuṇa, when his ferocity has been appeased, releases Śunahṣepa (RV.I.24.11-13). It is also true for the 'people' that the son 'supersedes' the father and inherits his rank, as in Kauṣ. U.II.15 (10) where if the father who has made the last 'bequest' by which the transmission and delegation of all his powers to his son is effected should recover, he can no more resume these powers than if he were actually dead, but must live subject to his son, or as a religious mendicant. The 'supersession' of Varuṇa by Indra, or rather by the twins (*yamaū*, RV.VI.59.2) *Indrāgnī*, is an ontological, not an historial event.

The proceeding Agni in RV.X.124 leaves *himself* behind at the same time that he goes forth, as also in RV.III.55.7 where 'he proceeds in front and still remains within his ground' (*ánv ágrāḥ cárati ksēti budhnāḥ*): 'the Son remains within as essence and goes forth as Person

... the divine nature steps forth into relations of otherness. . . other, but not another, for this distinction is rational, not real' (Eckhart, Evans ed., I.268). Nor is there any inconsistency in that, having 'chosen' Indra, Agni invites his father Varuṇa to 'Come forth to be the ruler of my Kingdom' (RV.X.124.5), for Varuṇa is Indra (RV.IV.42.3) as much as he is Agni, and the Rājasūya is 'Varuṇa's Quickening,' or regeneration . . . The 'late' king rules in the 'present.'

34. Agni is Ahir Budhnya *ab intra* and Agni Gārhapatya *ab extra* (AB.III.36, KB.XVI.7, cf. VS.V.33). RV. abounds with references to Agni's chthonic origins from his 'ground' (*budhna*, e.g. IV.I.11. *sá jāyata prathamāḥ . . . budhné*=V.3.1 *tvām agne várūṇo jāyase*)—a 'ground' amongst the waters—or from the 'rock' (*adri*), the 'stone' (*ásman*), or 'mountain' (*parvata*).

35. In connection with the 'fear' and 'love' of Varuṇa it should be remembered that 'Nothing prevents one and the same thing being loved under one aspect and hated under another' (St. Thomas Aquinas, *Sum. Theol.* I.20.2.*ad 4*).

36. Or 'five missiles' (Keith): to be identified, in the last analysis with the 'five arrows' of Kāmadeva, bearing in mind that Love and Death, Kāma and Mrtyu, are one and the same Person.

37. It is not of his own power, but inasmuch as 'God is with him' that the Kṣatriya is victorious; he says, accordingly: 'I destroy the unfriends and lead forth my own subjects with the help of the spiritual Power' (*kṣinomi brahmaṇā mitrān unnayāmi svām*, VS.XII.82 and ŚB.VI.6.3.15), of which RV affords innumerable instances in the cooperation of Agni-Bṛhaspati with Indra against the Asuras. We propose to show that the archetype of the Unfriend or Unfriends, so often referred to in the texts as 'he whom we hate and who hateth us' (—is a Rakṣasa TS.VI.3.9.2), and as the 'loveless brotherhood' (*apriyam bhrātṛyam*) are primarily and in most cases Vṛtra-Varuṇa-Mrtyu and the Asuras generally. Quite exceptionally *bhrātṛyatā* is 'brotherly aid' in JB.I.184. In ŚB.IV.3.3.5 'the evil, hateful brotherhood' (*pāpmane dviṣate bhrātṛyāya*) is explicitly Vṛtra, and in ŚB.XII.7.3.4 *dviṣantam bhrātṛyam* is Namuci, Pāpmana. In JUB.I.7.2 the 'evil brotherhood', to be excluded 'mentally' from any share in these worlds, can only be, so to say, Satan. He has accomplished the purpose of the Sacrifice who 'has slain his Vṛtra' (TS.II.5.4.5). So that while it is beyond question that the Purohita sometimes assists, or rather enables, the King to overcome human enemies, the fundamental conflict is 'not against flesh and blood, but against the

principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world (New Test. *Eph.* VI.12). When it is a question of human enemies, these are assimilated to the Adversary himself, and the weapons effective against him are turned against them: war, from the traditional point of view, being no more than any other vocational activity, a merely profane engagement (see Note 106).

The 'brotherhood' (*bhrātr̥vyah*, which Hume, p. 293 equates etymologically with 'cousin') that is synonymous with enmity (and to be distinguished from brotherliness *bhrātr̥tvā*, in a favourable sense, RV.VIII.83.8, cf. X.23.7) is, then, the relationship of the Asuras to the Devas, of the Varuṇa who is 'not Mitra' but *amitra*, Unfriend, to Agni, *mitra*, the Friend. (SB. IV.4.5.3 *asti manusyānām ca sarpānām bhrātr̥vyam iva* = there is as it were a feud between men and snakes.) Varuṇa is Agni's 'elder brother' in RV.IV.1.2: 'Turn thou, O Agni, thine elder brother Varuṇa toward (or possibly, 'turn thyself toward) the Sun, support of men, the King, support of men' (*sa bhrātarām varuṇam agna ā vavṛtsva. . . jyeṣṭham . . . ādityam carṣanīdhṛtam, rājānam carṣanīdhṛtam*, where *ādityam* is the accusative of the person turned to, like *mā* in SB.IV.1.4.4 *upa māvartasva* and RV.IV.31.4 *abhī na ā vavṛtsva cakram na vṛttam arvataḥ* 'turn hitherwards. . .'). This is only the special case of the general rule that the Asuras are the elder brothers of the Devas (BU.I.3.1 *kānīyasā eva devāḥ, jyāyasā asurāḥ*; Mbh.XII.33.25 *asurā bhrātaro jyeṣṭhā devāś cāpi yavīyāsah*), and of the principle that the 'brother-hood' of 'those who hate one another' is that of the Devas and Asuras (TS.VI.4.10.1). It is significant that the root in *jyeṣṭha* is *jyā*, with the primary meaning to 'oppress', distinctly preserved in RV.VII.86.6 *asti jyāyān kānīyasa upāre*, 'the elder is at hand to hurt the younger' (the reference being to Varuṇa himself, *ārpayitṛ* in SB.V.5.4.31): it is, in fact, the rule in folklore that the elder brothers or sisters oppress the younger brother who is always the solar here, or younger sister who is always the bride of a solar hero.

It will be noticed that RV.IV.1.2 cited above is rather 'entropaic' than apotropaic, and that *ā vavṛtsva*, like *upa māvartasva*, is essentially an invitation to union, *samsṛityai*: the opposite of *āvṛt*, to 'turn to,' is *vivṛt*, to 'turn apart,' as in RV.VII.80.1 *vivartayantīm rajasī* 'divorcing Sky and Earth', and SA.VII.12 *sāndhiṁ vivartayati*, 'disjoins the grammatical fusion of syllables' (in a *sāṃhitā* text, the marriage of words being thought of as analogous to that of Sky and Earth, and thus life-giving, *āyusya*, ib.VIII.2. For *vyāvṛtti* see TS.VI.1.1.5, TS.V.4.10.3, AB.VIII.8 and *vyāvṛtya* *śarireṇa* SB.X.4.3.9). The

'entropy' of our texts thus annuls the 'divorce' of Sky and Earth, Essence and Nature, that takes place at the 'creation', or rather manifestation or utterance, of the worlds, as in RV.VII.80.1 where the Light of Dawn 'divorces the conterminous regions (Sky and Earth, according to Sāyaṇa, but also possibly Day and Night), makes manifest the several worlds' (*vivartayantī rajasī samante āviṣkṛṇvatīm bhuvanani viśvā*), cf. RV.VI.32.2 and SB.IV.6.7.9. We remark in passing that the separation of the conjoint principles by Light, usually that of the early-waking or early-kindled Agni, is the motive in the equivalent story of Purūravas and Urvaśī, SB.XI.5.1.4, and in that of Eros and Psyche.

Ā *vavṛtsva*, then, is a prayer for the Asura's conversion (cf. W.N.Brown, 'Proselytising the Asuras', JAOS 39, 1919), as in RV.I.25 where Varuṇa's wrath is deprecated and his mercy is lauded, and AB.III.4 where Agni's Varuṇya form is 'deadly to be touched' (cf. JUB.II.14 and JB.I.126 Indra to Uśanas, *asinān abhyūpavartasva*) and 'one should approach him only having made him Mitra' (*mitrakṛtyevopāsate*, cf. JUB.VIII.74.1 *mitram iva priyam*), which is possible inasmuch as 'As one approaches him, so he becomes' (*yathā-yathopāsate tad eva bhavati*, SB.X.5.2.20). In the same way 'Soma was Vṛtra' (SB.IV.4.3.4 and TS.1.2.10.2 Soma: *sīda Varuṇo'si dhṛtavrato [dharmarāja] vāruṇam asi*; as 'Prajāpati was Rohita', AV.XIII.2.39). 'Soma when tied up (*upanaddha*) is Varuṇa' (*aśnāpinaddham* RV.X.68.8 and TS.VI.1.11—*Varun iva esa yajamānam abhyaiti yat krītaḥ soma upanaddha. . .*) and 'saying, 'Come forth as Mitra' (*mitro na ehi*) he (the Priest) makes what is of Varuṇa's nature to be of Mitra's' (*yad vāruṇam santam maitrām karoti*, TS.VI.1.11.1-2), as also in SB.III.3.3.10, quoting VS.IV.27, where Soma is besought to come forth as Mitra (*mitro na ehi* TS.I.2.7); that is to say 'Have mercy upon us, O Lord.' In SB.III.3.4.25,29,30 where 'Soma is now of Varuṇa's nature', (Sāyaṇa says *somo varuṇo bhavati*), he is besought 'not to slay our men (*avīrahā* as in RV.I.91.19) or do evil': the ritual slaying of Soma himself, essential to his kingship, is called a 'slaughter of his evil, not of himself' (SB.III.9.4.1718). The Adābhya Soma draught drawn 'from the tied up Soma, for (his) liberation' is the symbol of 'Prajāpati the Liberator' (*atimokṣīṇī*) and, by analogy, the human Sacrificer and Comprehensor, who is no less than Soma himself the victim and has died with Soma as such, 'is wholly liberated from the evil brotherhood' (*ati pāpmānam bhrātr̥vyam mucyate*, TS.VI.6.9.2 and SB.XII.7.3.4): and here it is unmistakeable that the 'evil brotherhood' does not refer to any human

adversary but to the Vṛtra-Varuṇa nature that was in Soma and in the Sacrificer's 'old man'. (*druho muñcāmi varuṇasya pāśat* AV.II.10.1.8; ŠB.IV.5.7.7; for Varuṇa as redeemer from sin, see ŠB.III.8.5.10 and TS.III.4.11.6; Varuṇa's rope = the noose of the sacred order ŠB.III.7.4.1).

Soma is not destroyed by his 'death', but 'made to go alive to the world of heavenly-light', and in the same way the Sacrificer by his death with Soma goes alive to the world of heavenly-light (TS.VI.6.9.2); furthermore, 'he gains through him (Soma) this All, and there is no slayer, no deadly shaft for him by whom this All has been gained' (ŠB.III.3.4.9), that is to say he wins the 'human immortality' here and 'incorruptible immortality' hereafter, as explained in Note 53.

Although our immediate problem has been that of the identification of the 'evil brotherhood', we cannot refrain from pointing out here that there are the closest possible parallels between the Indian and the Christian sacrifices, and that the Indian doctrine is not merely like, but, with only the substitution of the 'Agni' for 'Christ' (a merely nominal difference; and, in this connection the etymological equivalence of (anointed=) *χριστός* = *Christos* and *ghṛta** is not without interest), identical with that of N.T. Rom.VI.5-9: 'For if we have been planted together (Gr. *sympytoi* for which Liddell and Scott's first meaning is 'born with one', i.e. coborn, *sajāta*, *sayoni*, and of the same parentage with him) in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: 'Knowing this, that our old man is crucified (sacrificed) with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that hence forth we might not serve sin. For he that is dead is freed from sin. Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him: Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more (*jam non moritur* = *na punar mriyate*); death hath no more dominion over him.' 'Planted together' is of particular interest here, and might better have been rendered by 'Sown together'; we recognize the usual symbol of agriculture, in which the womb is the field into which the man, whether in natural or in supernatural generation, sows himself, and from which he springs up again (John XII.24, 'Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground *and die*, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit'). Now, just as the natural insemination is a death and a regeneration (JUB.III.8.10 and

9.1, etc.), so is the supernatural, where the sacrificial fire is the womb and it is inasmuch as the Sacrificer 'inseminates himself' (*ātmānam siñcati*) therein that he comes to birth in yonder Sun and is possessed of two selves (*dvijātman*, JB.I.17.6, cf. AB.VI.29 and ŠB.VII.2.1.6), of which the second is, of course, the 'new man', the *anyam ātmānam* of ŠB.IV.3.4.5. And just as in natural generation the newborn son is a rebirth of the father, so here that 'other self' of the 'new man' is a regeneration of the 'old man' that was sacrificed ('made holy') together with the deity, who is the sacrifice. It is the 'old man's' evil, not himself that is slain; the 'death of the soul' is not a destruction of anything but its evil, nothing but the annihilation of what is already negative; in the agricultural symbolism it is only the husk of the grain that is left behind, not the germ that springs up again. The new man that thus springs up is at once the son of the old man and a son of God; and it is with reference to the first of these affiliations (both implied by St. Paul's *sympytoi*) that Eckhart, distinguishing the accidental features of the natural man from the essence of the other and new man, says that 'He who sees me, sees my child' (Evans,I.408; Pfeiffer, p. 593 and Rūmī, *Mathnawī*, I-3511 'The body, like a mother, is big with the spirit-child'). But to see that self requires other eyes than those of the flesh (cf. Hermes, *Lib.* XIII.3 and S.I.23).

To return to 'Varuṇa and what is Varuṇya': it is Varuṇa that seizes (*grhnāti*) the sick man (TS.II.3.11.1; V.2.1.3; AB.VII.15), the Sacrificer's children (TS.VI.6.5.4; MS.I.10.2; ŠB.II.3.2.10) and 'whatever is seized by the Evil One'—or 'by evil'—(*yah pāpmanā grhīto bhavati*, ŠB.XII.7.2.17), i.e. Indra's mortal enemy, 'the overweening foe' (*abhimāti*) of TS.II.1.2.5 and RV.III.51.3 (cf. '*abhimāno devo varuṇah*', Sāyaṇa on RV.I.89.3 Agni and Indra, *per contra*, are *sumanas*, RV.passim). It is inasmuch as he thus 'seizes' that he is 'the Seizer' (*graha*, JUB.IV.1.7, etc.), an epithet of sinister connotation and a synonym of *makara*=*śisumāra* and *jhaṣa* (✓*jhaṣ*, to injure). It is with the 'noose of Order' (*rāsyāiva pāśena*) that one binds (*pratimuñcati*) the sacrificial victim, and 'that cord is Varuṇa's' *varuṇyā vā esā yad rājjuḥ*, ŠB.III.7.4.1). The Vedas, e.g. RV.I.24.11; I.25.1.2 abound with the fear of Varuṇa and the depreciation of his murderous wrath; the wages of sin is death and vengeance is his, to repay. In SA.XII.21 and 28 we find an amulet worn by the Sacrificer 'in order that the celestial Varuṇa (*divyo varuṇah*, i.e. Dyaus, *varuṇo dyaur iva* in RV.VII. 87.6) may not strike fear into him (*nainam. . . hanti bhītam*). . . and Varuna does not slay him in his pride, neither does the *makara*, or *graha* or *śisumāra*

*Let us declare aloud the name of *ghṛta!* VS. XVII.90; RV.IV.58.6-11.

adversary but to the Vṛtra-Varuna nature that was in Soma and in the Sacrificer's 'old man'. (*druho muñcāmi varuṇasya pāśat* AV.II.10.1,8; ŠB.IV.5.7.7; for Varuṇa as redeemer from sin, see ŠB.III.8.5.10 and TS.III.4.11.6; Varuṇa's rope = the noose of the sacred order ŠB.III.7.4.1).

Soma is not destroyed by his 'death', but 'made to go alive to the world of heavenly-light', and in the same way the Sacrificer by his death with Soma goes alive to the world of heavenly-light (TS.VI.6.9.2); furthermore, 'he gains through him (Soma) this All, and there is no slayer, no deadly shaft for him by whom this All has been gained' (ŠB.III.3.4.9), that is to say he wins the 'human immortality' here and 'incorruptible immortality' hereafter, as explained in Note 53.

Although our immediate problem has been that of the identification of the 'evil brotherhood', we cannot refrain from pointing out here that there are the closest possible parallels between the Indian and the Christian sacrifices, and that the Indian doctrine is not merely like, but, with only the substitution of the 'Agni' for 'Christ' (a merely nominal difference; and, in this connection the etymological equivalence of (anointed=) *χριστός* = *Christos* and *ghṛta** is not without interest), identical with that of N.T. Rom.VI.5-9: 'For if we have been planted together (Gr. *symphytoi* for which Liddell and Scott's first meaning is 'born with one', i.e. coborn, *sajāta*, *sayoni*, and of the same parentage with him) in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: 'Knowing this, that our old man is crucified (sacrificed) with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that hence forth we might not serve sin. For he that is dead is freed from sin. Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him: Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more (*jam non moritur* = *na punar mriyate*); death hath no more dominion over him.' 'Planted together' is of particular interest here, and might better have been rendered by 'Sown together'; we recognize the usual symbol of agriculture, in which the womb is the field into which the man, whether in natural or in supernatural generation, sows himself, and from which he springs up again (John XII.24, 'Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground *and die*, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit'). Now, just as the natural insemination is a death and a regeneration (JUB.III.8.10 and

9.1, etc.), so is the supernatural, where the sacrificial fire is the womb and it is inasmuch as the Sacrificer 'inseminates himself' (*ātmānam siñcati*) therein that he comes to birth in yonder Sun and is possessed of two selves (*dvijātman*, JB.I.17.6, cf. AB.VI.29 and ŠB.VII.2.1.6), of which the second is, of course, the 'new man', the *anyam ātmānam* of ŠB.IV.3.4.5. And just as in natural generation the newborn son is a rebirth of the father, so here that 'other self' of the 'new man' is a regeneration of the 'old man' that was sacrificed ('made holy') together with the deity, who is the sacrifice. It is the 'old man's' evil, not himself that is slain; the 'death of the soul' is not a destruction of anything but its evil, nothing but the annihilation of what is already negative; in the agricultural symbolism it is only the husk of the grain that is left behind, not the germ that springs up again. The new man that thus springs up is at once the son of the old man and a son of God; and it is with reference to the first of these affiliations (both implied by St. Paul's *symphytoi*) that Eckhart, distinguishing the accidental features of the natural man from the essence of the other and new man, says that 'He who sees me, sees my child' (Evans,I.408; Pfeiffer, p. 593 and Rūmī, *Mathnawī*, I-3511 'The body, like a mother, is big with the spirit-child'). But to see that self requires other eyes than those of the flesh (cf. Hermes, *Lib.* XIII.3 and S.I.23).

To return to 'Varuṇa and what is Varuṇya': it is Varuṇa that seizes (*grīñati*) the sick man (TS.II.3.11.1; V.2.1.3; AB.VII.15), the Sacrificer's children (TS.VI.6.5.4; MS.I.10.2; ŠB.II.3.2.10) and 'whatever is seized by the Evil One'—or 'by evil'—(*yah pāpmanā grīñito bhavati*, ŠB.XII.7.2.17), i.e. Indra's mortal enemy, 'the overweening foe' (*abhimāti*) of TS.II.1.2.5 and RV.III.51.3 (cf. '*abhimāno devo varuṇah*', Sāyaṇa on RV.I.89.3 Agni and Indra, *per contra*, are *sumanas*, RV.passim). It is inasmuch as he thus 'seizes' that he is 'the Seizer' (*graha*, JUB.IV.1.7, etc.), an epithet of sinister connotation and a synonym of *makara*=*śiśumāra* and *jhaṣa* (✓jhas, to injure). It is with the 'noose of Order' (*ṛtasyaiva pāśena*) that one binds (*pratimūñcati*) the sacrificial victim, and 'that cord is Varuṇa's' *varuṇyā vā eṣā yad rajjuḥ*, ŠB.III.7.4.1). The Vedas, e.g. RV.I.24.11; I.25.1.2 abound with the fear of Varuṇa and the deprecation of his murderous wrath; the wages of sin is death and vengeance is his, to repay. In ŠA.XII.21 and 28 we find an amulet worn by the Sacrificer 'in order that the celestial Varuṇa (*divyo varuṇah*, i.e. Dyaus, *varuṇo dyaur iva* in RV.VII. 87.6) may not strike fear into him (*nainam. . . hanti bhītam*). . . and Varuṇa does not slay him in his pride, neither does the *makara*, or *graha* or *śiśumāra*

*Let us declare aloud the name of *ghṛta*! VS. XVII.90; RV.IV.58.6-11.

hurt him.' On the other hand, when the peace-offering has been made, when the Asura has been 'converted' and 'made a Friend of,' then it is not 'Varuṇa' but the *mixta persona* of Mitrāvaraṇau that accepts the Sacrificer (RV.I.25.6): 'By means of Mitra he (the priest) appeases (*śamayati*, slays, sacrifices) Varuṇa for him (the Sacrificer) . . . sets him free (*muñicati*) from Varuṇa's noose, so that even if his life be almost gone (*yádī tāsur bhávati*, not Keith's 'if his life be gone' but 'if it be becoming gone') he verily lives' (TS.II.1.9.3); and in the same way that the royal Sacrificer himself, assimilated to Prajāpati (the *atimokṣijī* of TS.VI.6.9.2), and by means of the barley offering, 'delivers his children (subjects) from Varuṇa's noose (*prajā varuṇapāśat prámūñicati*), and those children of his are born sound and sinless (*tá asyānamīva ákilbiṣāḥ prajāḥ prajāyante*), saying: 'It is in order that my children may be born sound and sinless that I would be quickened'" (*abhisūye*, ŚB.V.2.4.2; V.2.5.16; II.5.2.2.3), cf. RV.X.97.16 *varuṇu Śāt . . . yamásya pádvīśāt sárvasmād devakilviśāt*, where the assimilation of Varuṇa to Yama is unmistakable, and we see also why it is that the Prince must be *reborn* to the Kingship, and for what he aspires to dominion.

As to the 'barley-offering' we learn from KB.V.3 that when Prajāpati's children 'have been expressed' (*sṛṣṭāḥ*) but are still unquickened (*aprasūtāḥ*, not viable, not alive, unborn, cf. *na jāyante* in Avyakta U., VI.1, JAOS. 60.349) but 'are eating of Varuṇa's barley' (*varuṇasya yavāni cakṣuh*), it is Varuṇa that 'restrains them with his nooses' (*vāruṇo varuṇapāśaili pratyamūñcat*), and that it is only when he has been 'endeared' (*prītāḥ*, i.e. made a friend, *mitra*) that he frees them from these nooses of Varuṇa and all evil (*varuṇa-pāśebhiyah sarvasmāc ca pāpmahāḥ prajāḥ prāmūñcat*, ŚB.II.5.2.2-5). Varuṇa's barley is the 'pasturage' (*yavasa*) from which they who are like kine without a herdsman (*gāvo ná . . . āgopāḥ*), yet are intent upon (or trust) the Friend (*abhi mitrāṁ citásah*), escape (*īyūḥ*, RV.VII.18.5-10); these same 'kine, led forth, eat of the Ari's (Indra's) barley (*gāvo yávam práyutā aryó akṣan*); I have seen them as they came forth, (now) in a Herdsman's care' (*sahágopāḥ*, RV.X.27.8). Varuṇa's barley, the food of the unborn, suggests the 'flesh-pots of Egypt', a correlation that corresponds to that of Varuṇa-Vṛtra with 'Pharaoh'. (My suggested rendering of *citásah* above by 'who trust' depends upon the fact that *vicikitsa* is the contrary of *śraddhā*, from which it follows that to 'trust in' or 'trow on' is a meaning that pertains to *Vāit*, cf. *cétyah* in RV.VI.1.5.)

We have elsewhere (JAOS 55.409-10) identified Varuṇa and the Varunya Agni with Ahi-Vṛtra-Śuṣṇa-Namuci, and these with the Pharoah of Ezekiel XXIX. 3, 'The great dragon that lieth in the midst of the rivers, which has said, My river is my own, and I have made it for myself.' *Pitáraṁ jahámi* in RV.X. 124.4 makes of the Asura Father, who is also the 'elder brother' (*pitā, jyeṣṭha bhrātā vā*, Sāyana on RV.X.20.7), an 'Ahi' in the sense of JB.III.77 *yad ahīyata, tad ahīnām ahītvam*: and actually, the prior and fiercer form, which Agni abandons when he is kindled, is an Ahi (Ahi Budhnya, AB.III.36, KB. XVI.7, Ahi Dhuni, RV.I.79.1).

Varuṇa and Vṛtra derive alike from *Vṛ* to 'cover' and 'restrain' (Nirukta, X.3; BD.II.33; Grassmann, Wörterbuch; and cf. RV.VI.75.18 *urorvarīyo varunah*, VII.82.6 where Varuṇa *pra vṛṇoti*, Sāyana's gloss on RV.I.89.3 *vṛṇoti svakīyaiḥ pāśair āvṛṇotīti, rātry abhimāno devo varuṇah*,' and GB.I.7, *varaṇa* as Varuṇa): i.e., inasmuch as Mitra is the Day and Varuṇa the Night, the Darkness (TS.I.3.11 *dhāmno dhāmno rājannitō varuṇa no muñca, yadāpo aghniyā varuṇeti śapāmahe tato varuṇa no muñca=* From every rule of thine, O king Varuṇa, set us free; from whatever oath by the waters, by the kine, by Varuṇa, we have sworn, From that, O Varuṇa, set us free) i.e. Evil, Death. Cf. also TS.II.1.7.4; TB.I.7.10; and Mādhava on TS.I.8.16.1; TS.V.7.5.1; AB.IV.5. *Muñca* would suggest Varuṇa is by nature *na-muci*, non-dying.

'We are thus led to assimilate Varuṇa, not to the vanquishers of the demons, but to the demons themselves. . . This is the severe aspect of the Divinity, which his name proclaims in advance' (Bergaigne, *La Religion Védique*, III.115): 'The epithet *asura* is . . . specially applicable to Varuṇa' (Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, p. 24), as is that of Deva to Savitṛ.

It is in connection with the withholding of the waters by Varuṇa and their release by Indra that the assimilation of Varuṇa to Śuṣṇa and Vṛtra is most apparent; we must not be confused by the fact that, when associated with Mitra, Varuṇa becomes a 'rain-god'. It is to Varuṇa that stagnant waters pertain, for they are 'seized' (*grhīta*) by him as their *graha*, while it is the flowing waters, 'living waters', divine and fit for sacrificial use that Indra frees from Vṛtra (TS.II.3.13.2 seizure by Varuṇa's noose is seizure 'by evil', *pāpmā*; also TS.VI.4.2.3; ŚB.IV.4.5.10, etc.). The opposition of Indra to Varuṇa and the assimilation of the latter to Vṛtra are conspicuous in AV.III.13.1—2 where the waters 'go forth together (*samprayatih*) when Ahi is smitten (*ahau . . . hatē*). . . When sent forth by Varuṇa

(*yat pr̄śitāḥ varunena*) . . . then Indra obtained you' (*tad āpnod indro vah*) and it is evident that Varuṇa only releases the waters when he, Ahi, has been smitten. ('In the very remarkable song [RV.X.124.7] Vṛtra God.' E. Diecke, *Indra's Drachenkampf*, Berlin 1905, p. 16). Another, and rather remarkable evidence for the equation Vṛtra=Varuṇa is afforded by a correlation of SB.I.6.4.18–19 (cf. KB.III.5) with SB.II.4.4.17–19. In the first of these passages the solar Indra swallows up the lunar Vṛtra on the 'night of cohabitation' (*amāvāsyā*, new moon night). In the last, the light Moon is Varuṇa, the dark Moon Mitra (so called by assimilation, in accordance with SB.X.6.2.1 where, in connection with Sun and Moon, it is explicit that the eaten is called by the name of the eater); and these two being a couple (*mithunam*), Mitra (the Sun) inseminates Varuṇa (the Moon). From this it follows also that Vṛtra-Varuṇa (Moon) is Indra-Mitra's (Sun's) wife; a conclusion by no means at variance with Varuṇa's femininity elsewhere or with the equation of Vṛtra and kṣatra in PB.XVIII.9.6, and notably in agreement with RV.X.85.29 'Potentiality (*kṛtyā*) hath gotten feet (i.e., put off her ophidian nature; cf.I.152.3 and III.55.14), and as a wife inhabits (ā. . . *vīśate*, cf. JUB.I.33.6 *ādityam praviśati*) her Lord' (the Sun). We see again that marriage is a reconciliation of hostile principles, involving the death (and regeneration) of the enemy as such; that there are more ways than one of 'killing' a dragon; and that the *vajra* (thunderbolt) being a 'shaft' of light, and 'light the progenitive power' (TS.VII.1.1.1; *principium motus et vitae* [=the beginning of motion and life], Witelo, *Lib.de intelligentiis IX*, etc.), the piercing of Vṛtra is also a fertilization, to be equated with that of the 'lightning-smitten' Semele by Zeus.

Varuṇa is equated to Mṛtyu. By extracting from the limbs (*aṅga*) of Mṛtyu their sap (*rasa*) the final result, *aṅgiras*, is reached. The origin of *aṅgiras* is from the bitter waters of the ocean, that is, from Varuṇa who is taken here without doubt in his occasional sinister, demonic sense, as of Vṛtra. Cf. Abel Bergaigne: *La Religion Védique* III.144 and Geldner *Vedische Studien*, II.292.

The Varuṇa into whose maw the Seven Rivers flow (*yasya te sapta sindhavah* RV.VIII.69.12 and 'ruler of the seven rivers' RV.VIII.41.9) is the Varuṇa that lies in wait against the current of the river, to seize the sacrificer's children (the subjects of the King; TS.VI.6.5.4), the 'Infanticide' (*śiśumāra* or-*mārin*, TA.II.19 *parabrahma* lauded as *śiśumāra* and *śiśukumāra*), Indra's enemy, who lies against the current with

yawning jaws ready to seize the Sacrificer himself, and must be appeased (PB.VIII.6.8; XIV.5.15; JB.I.174; III.193, and TS.V.1.6.8 where Agni, as Varuṇa, 'attacks' the sacrificer, and SB.IX.4.2.15-17 where Agni completed = Varuṇa): the dessication of this same Śiśumāra by Indra, who forces him upstream (cf. the apotropaic *punāḥ sarām* in AV.IV.17.2 *pratikūlam* in X.1.7 and *pratisara* in SA.XII.30) onto the dry land where he 'is left, as it were' (*hīna iva*, cf. JB.III.77 cited above) and his subsequent resurrection when he praises Indra who then enables him to return to the sea (JB.III.173), as in the 'Flood Legend' Manu rescues the tiny Jhasa and enables it to return to the sea (SB.I.8.1.6), and as in the Alexander legend (see *Ars Islamica*, I, 1934, pp. 177–8), narrates in other words the inveteration and rejuvenation, death and resurrection, of Cyavana, Prajāpati, Varuṇa.

Notable for Varuṇa's connection with death is the fact that the creaking of the axle of the bodily vehicle is a sign of death (BU.IV.3.35), and when the axle creaks, this 'is Varuṇa of the evil voice' (*durvāk*, TS.2.9.1; cf. JUB.I.52.8): that he is addressed as 'sweet-voiced' (*suvāk* is 'to pacify him' (*śāntyai.ib.*) and corresponds to the 'making him Mitra' in other contexts. (But 'axle creaks favorably, as Voice of Trees', in PB.VI; and 'Voice of Brahma utters Damayanti's name in creaking of axle', in Naiśadhīya Carita II.50; cf. also 'axle not oiled' TS.II.6.3.3, and Parmenides in Sextus Emp. *Adv.Doz.III*). It is an Asura that speaks in the creaking axle (SB.III.5.3.17 and VI.8.1.10; AB.IV.7), A Rāksasa that infests the car (TS.V.2.2.3), whereas Agni's car is silent (RV.I.74.7). It is repeatedly stated that what is 'ill-sounding' (*apadhvāntam*, JUB.I.52.8; CU.II.22.1) pertains to Varuṇa; and this agrees with the distinction of *kṣatra* from *brahma* as that of the toneless (cacophonous) *rc* from the chanted and harmonious *sāman*. Whatever is inauspicious, inadequate, or evil is referred to Varuṇa (TS.VI.6.7.3; cf. VII.3.11.1 *yo'smān dveṣṭi*), or to Trita (RV.VIII.47.13,14) who as Agni *ab intra*, the Varuṇa Agni, is Varuṇa (RV.VIII.41.6).

If Agni and Soma 'when constricted' (*upanaddha*) are of Varuṇa's nature, this agrees with the close connection of nooses (*pāśa*), bonds (*baddha*, *dāman*), and knots (*granthi*) with Varuṇa. Thus the knot (see *sarpabandha*) is inauspicious and distinctively Varuṇa's (SB.I.3.1.16; V.2.5.17; TS.V.2.9.1), the 'unting of Agni' is a dissipation of Varuṇa's wrath (TS.V.1.6.1): while on the other hand Indra is the archetype (cf. JISOA., Dec. 1935, pp. 5–6) of that Mahāvīra, Jina and Tirthāṅkara ('Great Hero', 'Conqueror' and 'Ford-finder': for the last

epithet cf. RV.VI.18.5 where *indro gādhāny akṛmō*, and further references in W.N. Brown, *Walking on the Water*) whose followers are expressly Nirgranthas, 'Freed of the Knot', surely that 'knot of Śuṣṇa's that Indra resolves' (*vi śuṣṇasya saṅgrathitam... vidat*, RV.X.61.13), the Gordian knot that Soma is enjoined to untie in RV.IX.97.18; X.143.2, and all those knots that are called 'Knots of the Heart' (*hrdaya granthih*, cf. Aristotle Met. III.I.I; and Crooke, *Popular Religion and Theology of the Navaho Indians*, II.46 on cords and knots; J. Heckenbach, *De miditate sacra sacrisque vinculis*, Giessen, 1911). Now what is it to be freed from the knot? In the first place, to be released from Varuna's noose so as to be born and to receive a name and shape (*nāmarūpa*). But this is only a loosening, not an unloosening of the knot; for names themselves are knots (AA.II.1.6), and 'everything here is gripped by name' (*nāmnā... grhitam*, SB.IV.6.5.3). To be wholly 'freed of the knot' is to be released from 'name and shape', and to have 'gone home' (Muṇḍ.Up.III.2.8 *nāmarūpād vimuktah parātparam puruṣamupaiti divyam*; Sn.1074 *nāmakāyā Vimutto attham paleti*).

The foregoing is far from exhaustive of the material relative to Varuna's evil nature (PB.XXIV.18 Varuṇa opposed to Deva), i.e. to the Divine Majesty, or Wrath of God, considered apart from the Divine Mercy, to the Divine Darkness considered apart from and as opposed to the Divine Light, to Nonbeing and Unreality as logically distinguished from Being and Reality. It has been shown what is the nature of the 'hostile brotherhood' from which the Regnum in alliance with the Spiritual Authority redeems itself in the Sacrifice.

We must, at the same time briefly indicate that the whole conception is reversible, for what is 'night' from the human point of view is 'day' from that of the sage (BG.II.69), what seems untrue or unreal to men is true and real to the Gods, the way to heaven is countercurrent, the *via affirmativa* in which the aspects of deity are distinguished must be followed by the *via negativa* in which they are all one. Love and Death are one and the same power, and to one who knows how to approach him, 'making him a friend' (*mitrakṛtya*), he is the friend, Mitra as much as he is Varuṇa, and we can ask impatiently: 'When at last shall we come again to be in Varuṇa?' (RV.VII.86.2); love casting out fear.

38. This is the usual hermeneia of *sāman*. That they (He and She, Sky and Earth) united (*sametya*) and brought forth the Chant is the quiddity of the Chant' (JUB.I.51.2, AB.III. 23, etc.). 'He' (*ama*) is in various contexts Agni, Vāyu, Āditya, Candra, *kṛṣṇa*, *prāṇa manas*,

ātman, *sat*, *sāman*; and 'she' (*sā*), Iyam (Earth), Antarikṣa (Air), Dyaus (Sky)—the three 'domains'—*naksatrāni*, *śukla*, *apāna*, *vāc*, *cakṣus*, *śrotra* (cf. BU.I.4.17), *asat*, *rc* (JUB.I. 53, CU.I.6,7, etc.); and all these are aspects of the Sacerdotium and Regnum respectively.

39. JUB. in terms of Sky and Earth, brother and sister, supplies the 'happy ending' to Yama's abortive wooing by Yami in RV.X.10, where, for example, *anyám icchasva... pátim* in verse 10 corresponds to *anyatra mithunam icchasva* in JUB.I.53.6. 'Yama's rejection of 'Yami' represents only one side of the mutual 'horror' of one another felt by the conjoint principles, divided *ab extra*, and because of which 'she' shrinks from 'him' as often and as much as he from her, at the same time that each desires the other. All this pertains to the archetypal 'psychology of sex'. The pattern of Indian ontology—*itiḥāsa* as *purāṇītpratipādakam* or *sṛṣṭipratipādakam brāhmaṇam*, *Sāyaṇa* on SB.XI.5.6.8, i.e. the *bhāvavṛta* hymns of RV.—is immeasurably less multifarious than has been supposed by those who consider 'only the names' (S.I.11). In the last analysis, 'The Mother and the Father and the Child are this All' (ŚA. VII.15), 'this Earth is the womb of Everything' (SB.IV.1.2.8), Eve is the 'mother of all living' (Gen.II.20). The stories of Śiva and Pārvatī in the *Kumārasambhava*, and that of Purūravas and Urvaśī in the *Vikramorvaśī* are just as much as the legend of Yama and Yami versions of one and the same Liebesgeschichte Himmels (=Lovestory of the Heavens).

Who then are Yama and Yami? We propose to show that they are not *sui generis*, but Sky and Earth, Day and Night, Indrāgnī, the Aśvins, the Sacerdotium and Regnum, *dampati* and all other *dvandvas* ['Twins' (*jāmī*) in RV.I.159.4] As a preliminary to this argument we must point out that 'Yama' alone means 'Twins' (du.), i.e. Yama and Yami, just as Sāma is Sāma and Rc, Prajāpati *manas* and *vāc*, Agni born *brahma* and *kṣatra*, and *patipatnī* one in the single androgynous Person before their schism: and that duals such as *pitarau*, *mātarau*, *svasā* are no more than *jāmāyah* in RV.X.10.10 necessarily couples of one and the same sex but nearly always pairs of opposite sex, 'father and mother' (cf. *dampati*) 'brother and sister', etc. Thus in RV.III.54.7 where Sky and Earth are *svásārā*, I.185.5 where they are *svásārā jāmīpitrōr upāsthe*, and I.159 where they are explicitly a Father and a Mother, whose respective natures are those of *manas*, 'Intellect', and *svatavas=dakṣa*, 'Power', having a progeny (*prajā*), but also referred to as *mātarā*, 'parents,' and as *jāmī sāyonī mithunā sāmokasā*, 'uterine twins, consorts cohabitant.'; it is obvious that *svásārā* and *jāmī* can only be 'twin

brother and sister,' and at the same time impossible not to recognize the Yama and Yamī of RV.X.10.4.5 *paramām jāmi tān nau . . . garbhé . . . dāmpatī*. In RV.VIII.60.1 the reference of *mātrōḥ* is not to Agni's 'mothers' but to his 'parents', the firesticks, which are always thought of as male and female and may be addressed as Pururavas and Urvaśī, and similarly in RV.VI.49.2 that of *yuvatyōḥ* is not to 'two young mothers' but to Father Sky and Mother Earth. In RV.VI.59.2 Indrāgnī are *bhrātarā . . . yamaū* which can be taken to mean 'twin brothers' from one point of view, but equally 'twin brother and sister' when the relation of *brahma* to *kṣatra* is emphasized; tho in the same verse the *ihehamātarā* are not the usual 'parents' but 'two mothers, here and there' on whom Indrāgnī are begotten by their one Father (these 'mothers', Sāyaṇa's Aditi and Earth, are Eckhart's 'Mary ghostly and Mary in the flesh'). It is strange that much of this should have been overlooked by Hopkins (*JAOS* 16.cxlvi) and others who, while always ready to render *pitarau* and *mātarau* by 'parents' (m. and f.) invariably render *svasārā* by 'sisters', regardless of the fact that the relationship of Sky to Earth is never that of sister to sister (except as *vinatā* and *kadrū*) or brother to brother, but that of brother to sister, father to daughter, and husband to wife.

Yama, who is regularly identified with Agni, may take Agni's place as coborn twin (*yamo ha jāta indreṇa saha*, *Nirukta*, X.21), Indra then clearly replacing Yamī, Earth, as Yama's bride (*SB.VII.2.1.10*; *TS.III.3.8.3*, 'Yama is Agni, Yamī the Earth'), quite in agreement with *AB.III.38* where 'Indra is This (Earth). . . the King of Being is This (Earth)', and *AV.XIV.1.48* where the Earth is Agni's bride.

The Aśvins, another pair of twins, may be only another form of the two pairs (*śyenau* in RV. and described as 'horse faced' cf. Gopinath Rao, *Elements of Hindu Iconography*, vol.4, p. 544) already mentioned and collated. It can hardly be doubted that the Aśvins, twins 'born here and there, one of ye Sumakha's lordly conqueror, the other Subhaga, son of Sky' (*iheha jātā . . . jiṣṇur vāmanyah sumakhasya sūrirdivo anyah subhagah putra uhe*, RV.I.181.4), must be identified with the twins Indrāgnī 'whose mothers are here and there' (*ihehamātarā*, RV.VI.59.2), and of whom one in his capacity as Mahāvīra and Jina is certainly 'Good Makha's conqueror' (or Sacrificer, Makha being the Sacrifice, and Sūriḥ implying Maghavan; see the fuller references in *JAOS* 55.377-82), and the other as the Sun certainly 'Good Bhaga.' That the Aśvins ride in a common chariot (*rathyeva vīrajeva yamā* RV.II.39.2, *samānayojano hi vām rathaḥ I.30.18*) again suggests Indrāgnī

(*sarathāṁ tashthivātsā*, RV.I.108.1, *samaanē ā rathe*, VI.59.5) and likewise Kṛṣṇa and Arjuna (BG., cf. note 5, p. 40). That the Aśvins are referred to in RV.II.39.1,3 as 'two Brahmās' (*brahmāṇā*) and as 'two Śakras' (*śakrā*, cf. *Nirukta XII.1, rājānau*), and in TA.I.10 as 'two horses', day and night, etc. as a 'pair', may well be an allusion to Indrāgnī who are both 'priests' (*Indro brahmā*, RV.VIII.16.7, cf. SB.IV.6.6.5; JUB.I.45.1) and both 'kings' (*indrā nu āgnī . . . vajriṇā . . . devā*, RV.VI.59.3, etc.); the emendation *cakrā* for the *śakrā* of RV.II.39.3 is quite unnecessary, however plausible in view of RV.X.10.7 where Yama and Yamī are 'two wheels' (i.e. Sky and Earth, Day and Night, Manas and Vāc, as wheels of the cosmic and sacrificial chariot, cf. RV.I.30.19; VIII.89.4; AB.V.30, 33; JUB.I.20.3; III.16.1.2; SB.II.3.3.12; and BD.VII.126 Sun and Moon, *Prāṇāpānau*, Day and Night, or *rodasī* of RV.VIII.70.5 and X.65.5). The Aśvins are again *śakrā* in RV.X.24.4-5, where Sāyaṇa is absolutely right in referring *samīcī*, 'the conjoint' (Sky and Earth), to the Aśvins themselves and in saying that *niramanthatam*, 'ye churned' has for its object an implied *agnim*; that they thus bring Agni to birth is 'at the prayer of the Joyless' (*vimada*), i.e. 'for the sake of Atri-Vimada' (*atraye . . . vimadāya*, RV.I.51.3), cf. Trita's (Agni's, *trito guhyena vratena*, RV.I.163.3) appeals to Sky and Earth in RV.I.105, and Trita in the womb (RV.X.46.6): that is to say, then, at the prayer of Agni himself as yet unborn but longing to be born, eager for the sacrificial role and choosing Indra for his ally, as in RV.X.124.3,4. In RV.VI.11.1 where Agni is besought to 'turn hitherward' (*ā no mitrāvaraṇā nāsatyā dyāvā hotrāya pṛthivī vavṛtyāḥ*), Mitrāvaraṇā (which are *samrājā* in RV.X.65.5 and *hotārā* in RV.X.66.13), the Aśvins, and Sky and Earth, these are not six different essences but three aspects of one pair; that the same deity may be referred to in one and the same context by different names, as was observed by Hopkins, *Epic Mythology*, p.82, could be amply illustrated from RV., e.g. I.32.5 where *vṛtra*, *vyaṁsa*, and *ahi* are not three different persons, and X.62.11 where the *manu* of **a** is the *sāvami* of **b** the reference being to Vivavat's son by Saranyu's *savarmā*, and by the same token to the Manu Vivavati of RV.VII.52.1. If RV.III.54.7, speaking of Sky and Earth as 'brother and sister' (*svasārā*—like Zeus and Hera—) goes on to say that 'they call each other by conjugal names' (*bruvāte mithunāni nāma*)—*Dvandvanāma*, as Sāyaṇa, says—these can only be any or all of the names appropriate to any pair of 'mates' (*mithunā*) or any of the 'pairs of opposites' (*dvandvāni*) such as the two chariot wheels, or day and night, or well-done and ill-done of Kaus. Up.I.4; in other words,

brother and sister,' and at the same time impossible not to recognize the Yama and Yamī of RV.X.10.4.5 *paramām jāmi tān nau . . . garbhē . . . dāmpatī*. In RV.VIII.60.1 the reference of *mātrōḥ* is not to Agni's 'mothers' but to his 'parents', the firesticks, which are always thought of as male and female and may be addressed as Pururavas and Urvaśī, and similarly in RV.VI.49.2 that of *yuvatyōḥ* is not to 'two young mothers' but to Father Sky and Mother Earth. In RV.VI.59.2 Indrāgnī are *bhrātarā*. . . *yamaū* which can be taken to mean 'twin brothers' from one point of view, but equally 'twin brother and sister' when the relation of *brahma* to *kṣatra* is emphasized; tho in the same verse the *ihehamātarā* are not the usual 'parents' but 'two mothers, here and there' on whom Indrāgnī are begotten by their one Father (these 'mothers', Sāyaṇa's Aditi and Earth, are Eckhart's 'Mary ghostly and Mary in the flesh'). It is strange that much of this should have been overlooked by Hopkins (*JAOS* 16.cxlvi) and others who, while always ready to render *pitarau* and *mātarau* by 'parents' (m. and f.) invariably render *svasārā* by 'sisters', regardless of the fact that the relationship of Sky to Earth is never that of sister to sister (except as *vinatā* and *kadrū*) or brother to brother, but that of brother to sister, father to daughter, and husband to wife.

Yama, who is regularly identified with Agni, may take Agni's place as coborn twin (*yamo ha jāta indrena saha*, *Nirukta*, X.21), Indra then clearly replacing Yamī, Earth, as Yama's bride (*ŚB*.VII.2.1.10; *TS*.III.3.8.3, 'Yama is Agni, Yamī the Earth'), quite in agreement with *AB*.III.38 where 'Indra is This (Earth). . . the King of Being is This (Earth)', and *AV*.XIV.1.48 where the Earth is Agni's bride.

The Aśvins, another pair of twins, may be only another form of the two pairs (*śyenau* in RV. and described as 'horse faced' cf. Gopinath Rao, *Elements of Hindu Iconography*, vol.4, p. 544) already mentioned and collated. It can hardly be doubted that the Aśvins, twins 'born here and there, one of ye Sumakha's lordly conqueror, the other Subhaga, son of Sky' (*iheha jātā*. . . *jiṣṇur vāmanyah sumakhasya sūrirdivo anyah subhagah putra uhe*, RV.I.181.4), must be identified with the twins Indrāgnī 'whose mothers are here and there' (*ihehamātarā*, RV.VI.59.2), and of whom one in his capacity as Mahāvīra and Jina is certainly 'Good Makha's conqueror' (or Sacrificer, Makha being the Sacrifice, and Sūriḥ implying Maghavan; see the fuller references in *JAOS* 55.377-82), and the other as the Sun certainly 'Good Bhaga.' That the Aśvins ride in a common chariot (*rathyeva vīrājeva yamā* RV.II.39.2, *samānayojano hi vāṁ rathah* I.30.18) again suggests Indrāgnī

(*sarathāṁ tashthivānsā*, RV.I.108.1, *samaanē ā rathe*, VI.59.5) and likewise Kṛṣṇa and Arjuna (BG., cf. note 5, p. 40). That the Aśvins are referred to in RV.II.39.1,3 as 'two Brahmās' (*brahmāṇā*) and as 'two Śakras' (*śakrā*, cf. *Nirukta* XII.1, *rājānau*), and in TA.I.10 as 'two horses', day and night, etc. as a 'pair', may well be an allusion to Indrāgnī who are both 'priests' (*Indro brahmā*, RV.VIII.16.7, cf. *ŚB*.IV.6.6.5; *JUB*.I.45.1) and both 'kings' (*indrā nu āgnī*. . . *vajriṇā*. . . *devā*, RV.VI.59.3, etc.); the emendation *cakrā* for the *śakrā* of RV.II.39.3 is quite unnecessary, however plausible in view of RV.X.10.7 where Yama and Yamī are 'two wheels' (i.e. Sky and Earth, Day and Night, Manas and Vāc, as wheels of the cosmic and sacrificial chariot, cf. RV.I.30.19; VIII.89.4; *AB*.V.30, 33; *JUB*.I.20.3; III.16.1.2; *ŚB*.II.3.3.12; and *BD*.VII.126 Sun and Moon, *Prāṇapānau*, Day and Night, or *rodasī* of RV.VIII.70.5 and X.65.5). The Aśvins are again *śakrā* in RV.X.24.4-5, where Sāyaṇa is absolutely right in referring *samīcī*, 'the conjoint' (Sky and Earth), to the Aśvins themselves and in saying that *niramanthatam*, 'ye churned' has for its object an implied *agnim*; that they thus bring Agni to birth is 'at the prayer of the Joyless' (*vimada*), i.e. 'for the sake of Atri-Vimada' (*atraye*. . . *vimadāya*, RV.I.51.3), cf. Trita's (Agni's, *trito guhyena vratena*, RV.I.163.3) appeals to Sky and Earth in RV.I.105, and Trita in the womb (RV.X.46.6): that is to say, then, at the prayer of Agni himself as yet unborn but longing to be born, eager for the sacrificial role and choosing Indra for his ally, as in RV.X.124.3,4. In RV.VI.11.1 where Agni is besought to 'turn hitherward' (*ā no mitrāvaraṇā nāsatyā dyāvā hotrāya prthivī vavṛtyāḥ*), Mitrāvaraṇā (which are *samrājā* in RV.X.65.5 and *hotrā* in RV.X.66.13), the Aśvins, and Sky and Earth, these are not six different essences but three aspects of one pair; that the same deity may be referred to in one and the same context by different names, as was observed by Hopkins, *Epic Mythology*, p.82, could be amply illustrated from RV., e.g. I.32.5 where *vṛtra*, *vyan̄sa*, and *ahi* are not three different persons, and X.62.11 where the *manu* of **a** is the *sāvamī* of **b** the reference being to Vivasvat's son by Saranyu's *savamī*, and by the same token to the Manu Vivasvati of RV.VII.52..1. If RV.III.54.7, speaking of Sky and Earth as 'brother and sister' (*svasārā*—like Zeus and Hera)—goes on to say that 'they call each other by conjugal names' (*bruvāte mithunāni nāma*)—*Dvandvāna*, as Sāyaṇa, says—these can only be any or all of the names appropriate to any pair of 'mates' (*mithunā*) or any of the 'pairs of opposites' (*dvandvāni*) such as the two chariot wheels, or day and night, or well-done and ill-done of Kauś. Up.I.4; in other words,

just such dual names as are descriptive of the Aśvins in RV.II.39, names that are equally applicable to Sky and Earth, Yama and Yamī, or Sacerdotium and Regnum, or any other twin couples. In RV.II.39 the Aśvins are compared to many such 'pairs' of which some (*cakravākeva dampati*, cf. AV.XIV.2.64) are expressly and others (*grāvānā*, *aksī* [SB.XII.9.1.12 'two men in the eyes'], *vātā oṣṭhau*, and *ksāmā=dyāvāprthivī*) parabolically of opposite sex. Śakrā can as well be RV.X.61.23, where the reference is to Mitra and Varuṇa who are, as we shall show, related to one another as man to woman). *Aksī* 'two eyes', suggest the Sun and Moon (the two cups, Sun and Moon are the eyes of the Sacrifice TS.VI.4.10.2,3 and *cakṣuśi candrasūryau* Mund Up.II.1.4; Moon=Viṣṇu's left eye in *Naiṣadha-carita* 22, 89), *di-vō . . . aksī* in RV.I.72.10, respectively the god-world and man-world (JUB.III.13.12), or again Indra and Indrāṇī (SB.X.5.2.11-16). *Grāvānā* and *oṣṭhau*, 'the upper and the nether millstones' and 'upper and lower lip', are sometimes symbols of Sky and Earth; to which *ksāmā* in any case refers. *Vātā*, 'two winds' or 'two breaths', corresponds to *prāṇa*, i.e. *prāṇapānau*, in TS.VI.4.9.4, the two breaths that are so often equated with Mitra and Varuṇa, Sky and Earth, and considered male and female; T.A.G. Rao, *Elements of Hindu Iconography*, II.543, speaks of a personification of the Aśvins as *prāṇa* and *apāṇa*. An equation of the Aśvins with Sky and Earth, Yama and Yamī (i.e. Indra as Indrāṇī), *brahma* and *ksatra*, suggests a sexual differentiation at least in principle. In this connection it may well be significant that the Egyptian Zodiacal 'Twins', who correspond to the Greek Dioscuroi with whom the Aśvins have often been equated, are explicitly and iconographically of opposite sex (Wallis Budge, *Gods of the Egyptians*).

That the Aśvins (cf. Dioscuroi, Euripides, *Electra* 1350f) are regularly 'saviours' (*devanam baddhamuau, rakṣitārā, tārake*) from bonds and fetters (*baddha, pāśa*)—RV.II.39.6; AV.III.7.4; JB.III.72, etc.—is their function as 'physicians', because of which they are in need of purification (TS.VI.4.9.12; SB.IV.1.5.13); just like the conjoint principles Sky and Earth, etc., whose elaborate purifications are described in JUB.I.50-57 where it is impossible not to recognize that they are Yama and Yamī. RV.I.109.4 invokes Indrāṇī as 'Aśvins', and we see no more reason to explain this away by saying that the word means only 'horsemen' in this context than to argue that in RV.X.61.14-16, where Agni and Indra, Priest and King are called *nāsatyau*, anything but the 'Aśvins'

is meant. RV.VII.72.3 implied also in III.58.1 identifies the Aśvins with Sky and Earth by apposition (*rōdasī dhiṣnyemē ahhā vipro nāsatyā*, cf. VI.II.1 *nāsatyā dhyāvā hotrāya prthivī vavṛtyāh*).

There is a side of the problem connected with the birth of the Aśvins, to which we have so far merely alluded. We must bear in mind that the word Yama means 'twins', and therefore as Sāyaṇa clearly states, means Yama and Yamī. Now Yama is born of the Sun (Vivasvat; in Mbh. XII.208.17, Mārtanda) and Tvaṣṭṛ's daughter Saranyū, who forthwith made off (RV.X.17.1). This is evidently the same thing as the birth of Yama and Yamī from their 'parents' in RV.X.10.5, viz. from 'the Gandharva in the Waters and the Maid of the Waters' (*dpyā . . . yōṣā=Apsaras=Saranyū*) of RV.X.10.4. The Gods concealed the Immortal (bride) from mortals is another way of saying that she disappeared, as aforesaid; and they made her 'like' or 'double' (*savarnā*) who bore the Aśvins, and we are told that Saranyū deserted 'both mates' (*dvā mithund*, RV.X.17.2, an indication I think of the Aśvin's opposite sex, cf. RV.II.39.2 *dāmpatīva*; but cf. Whitney on AV.XVIII.2.33 and Griffith's version of RV.X.17.2). In BD.VI.162 Yama and Yamī are twins, Yama the 'elder' (*jyāyas*): Saranyū bears them, and then expressing (*sṛṣtvā*) a woman 'like' herself, entrusts the couple (*mithunau*) to this pseudo-Saranyū and herself makes off in the form of a mare; unaware of the deception, Vivasvat begets Manu (Manu Vaivasvata, RV.VIII.52.1; Manu Sāvarṇi, RV.X.62.9,11) on the pseudo-Saranyū, and then, realizing what has happened, pursues the mare and begets the Aśvins, whose equine designation is thus explained.

Are the Aśvins spirit and soul? See RV.I.164: Immortal brother of the mortal'.

'We have thus to do with two, or three, pairs of 'twins'; for Manu 'Man', is as much as 'Adam' a syzygy, and becomes the father of mankind by his 'daughter' Parśu ('Rib,' RV.X.85.23) or Idā (SB.I.8.10, etc.). The other versions of the story are discussed by Bloomfield (JAOS 15.172 ff.); the most noteworthy point in some of these is the term 'shadow' (*chāyā*) used instead of the word 'likeness' (*savarnā*); in VP.III.2 also, this 'shadow' is the mother of Manu Sāvarṇi.

The expression 'Shadow' is significant, and enables us to make some interesting comparisons. In GB.I.3 Brahma, having expressed the Waters, 'sees his shadow in them' (*tāsu svām chāyām apaśyat*),

and his seed falls and is 'supported' there; cf. the birth of Vasiṣṭha in RV.VII.33.11 and that of Vāmadeva in PB.VII.8.1, where *paryapaśyatām* corresponds to *chāyām apaśyat*. The 'Shadow' in the Waters is evidently the same as the Apsaras, 'she who moves in the Waters'. There are remarkable parallels in Egyptian and Greek mythology. The Egyptian Zodiacal 'Twins' mentioned above are the children of the solar Su or Tem (Amen-Rā), whose 'Shadow', who is also Mother-Earth, is his wife (Budge, op.cit., I.87 f. and II.315). The Greek Centaurs, who are certainly 'horse-men', are the children of Ixion (whose solar and, like Vivasvat's, mortal nature, is indicated by the fact that he is bound to a revolving wheel,—*a bhava-cakra*) by a 'cloud' in the 'semblance' (*simulacrum*) of Juno or Hera (see citations in Cook, *Zeus* III. 74f., especially *Myth. Vat.* 3.4.6 '*Ixion of Juno sought the marriage bond; she adorned a cloud in her fair form, and when Ixion joined with it, he begot the centaurs.*'

On Castor and Polydeukes (or Pollux), see Pindar N.O.X, Euripides-*Electra* 1342f, Euripides-*Helena* 690 (*leu-koppoi*) and Aeschylus, Vol.II, p.410 (Loeb Classical Library); also *Homeric Hymns*, 33 on Dioscuroi.

Now it can hardly be doubted that all these births of different mothers, one immortal and the other a likeness or transformation of the first, are really the divine and human births that are predicated in various ways of every solar hero, e.g. Heracles, Agni, Buddha, Mahāvīra, Christ; of whom Heracles, son of Zeus by Alcmene, was made a legitimate son of Juno; Agni is *dvimātā* (RV. *passim*); Buddha was born of Māyā who had been made 'in the likeness of the other' (*Lalita Vistara*, Lefmann p. 27, 1.12), i.e. born of 'Māyā the daughter of Māyā' (AV.VIII.9.5), i.e. of Aditi (Mother Earth) daughter of Aditi (mother of Gods), RV.VIII.55.2, and it is to be noted that Māyā 'like every mother of a Bodhisattva' died early, that is, deserted the child, who was fostered by Pajāpati; Mahāvīra, conceived by a *bamhanī* was born of a *khattiyānī*; while, as Eckhart says of Christ, 'his birth of Mary ghostly was more pleasing to him than his birth of Mary in the flesh.' It will be observed that the temporal and eternal mothers are generally named alike, or in any case are alike. It is then in agreement with an established pattern that Saranya, the daughter of Tvaṣṭṛ and to be identified with Sūryā, and her counterpart or transformation, are represented to be the immortal mother of Gods (Yama-Yamī) and the mortal mother of the Aśvins (who were 'not originally' Gods) and of

'Man.' Considered from this point of view the births of Yama (Yama-Yamī) and that of the Aśvins, who are respectively Sky and Earth *ab intra* and Sky and Earth *ab extra*, are not really, but only logically, two different births.

The whole story of Vivasvat and Saranya is thus only a specialized variant of that of the Spiritual Person (*ātman, puruṣa*) whose 'two halves' (*pati-patnī*) are to be equated with Yama-Yamī=Agni and Earth in SB.VII.2.1.10, and with the Egyptian Zodiacal 'Twins' who are of opposite sex and are called the 'two halves' of the one solar deity (Budge, loc. cit.), of which two halves the 'wife' after giving birth to 'Men' (*manuṣyāḥ*, patronymic of Manu and thus 'the children of men') reflects that 'He produced me from himself, forsooth' (*mātmana eva janayitvā*, i.e. 'I am his daughter'), conceals herself (cf. Cypria 8, where Nemesis 'dislikes to lie in love with her father Zeus' and flies from him, assuming forms of fish and animals; and Heracleitus Aph.X, 'Nature loves to hide'), *and becomes a cow, a mare, 'and so on down to the ants,' the Spiritual Person (*ātman, puruṣa*)—whom she cannot elude—assuming corresponding forms and engendering corresponding offspring (BU.I.4.1.4). The theme survives in folklore in ballads of the type of 'The Twa Magicians' (Child, *English and Scottish Popular Ballads*, Boston, 1904, no.44) in which there occur such lines as 'Then she became a duck, And he became a rose-kaimed drake,' and there can be no doubt that the 'two magicians' are ultimately the Māyīnī (Sky and Earth, *māyīn* and *māyā*) who couple and bring forth the Babe (Agni) in RV.X.5.3, and equally the Māyīnī Nāsatyau (Aśvins) who are Agni's kindlers in RV.X.24.4.5, cited above.

It will follow from all that has been said above that SB.IV.1.5.16 is essentially correct in saying that the 'Aśvins are manifestly (or exoterically, *ab extra*) Sky and Earth.' See TS.V.6.4.1 'The Aśvins are these two' and SB.XII.9.1.12 'these two men that seem to be in the eyes pertain to the Aśvins'. If Yāska in turn explains them in more than one way, as Sky and Earth, Sun and Moon, Day and Night, or as Two Good Kings (*Nirukta* XII.1, cf.XII.10 and BD.VII.126), this by no means implies, what Macdonell sug-

*Hence, as Meister Eckhart says, 'to find Nature as she is in herself, all her forms must be shattered'. An imitation of natural forms is not an 'imitation of Nature.'—*Paroksha-priyā iva hi devāḥ*.

and his seed falls and is 'supported' there; cf. the birth of Vasiṣṭha in RV.VII.33.11 and that of Vāmadeva in PB.VII.8.1, where *paryapaśyatām* corresponds to *chāyām apaśyat*. The 'Shadow' in the Waters is evidently the same as the Apsaras, 'she who moves in the Waters'. There are remarkable parallels in Egyptian and Greek mythology. The Egyptian Zodiacal 'Twins' mentioned above are the children of the solar Šu or Tem (Amen-Rā), whose 'Shadow', who is also Mother-Earth, is his wife (Budge, op.cit., I.87 f. and II.315). The Greek Centaurs, who are certainly 'horse-men', are the children of Ixion (whose solar and, like Vivasvat's, mortal nature, is indicated by the fact that he is bound to a revolving wheel,—*bhava-cakra*) by a 'cloud' in the 'semblance' (*simulacrum*) of Juno or Hera (see citations in Cook, *Zeus* III. 74f., especially *Myth. Vat.* 3.4.6 'Ixion of Juno sought the marriage bond; she adorned a cloud in her fair form, and when Ixion joined with it, he begot the centaurs.'

On Castor and Polydeukes (or Pollux), see Pindar N.O.X, Euripides-*Electra* 1342f, Euripides-*Helena* 690 (*leu-koppoi*) and *Aeschylus*, Vol.II, p.410 (Loeb Classical Library); also *Homeric Hymns*, 33 on *Dioscuroi*.

Now it can hardly be doubted that all these births of different mothers, one immortal and the other a likeness or transformation of the first, are really the divine and human births that are predicated in various ways of every solar hero, e.g. Heracles, Agni, Buddha, Mahāvīra, Christ; of whom Heracles, son of Zeus by Alcmene, was made a legitimate son of Juno; Agni is *dviṁatā* (RV. *passim*); Buddha was born of Māyā who had been made 'in the likeness of the other' (*Lalita Vistara*, Lefmann p. 27, 1.12), i.e. born of 'Māyā the daughter of Māyā' (AV.VIII.9.5), i.e. of Aditi (Mother Earth) daughter of Aditi (mother of Gods), RV.VIII.55.2, and it is to be noted that Māyā 'like every mother of a Bodhisattva' died early, that is, deserted the child, who was fostered by Pajāpatī; Mahāvīra, conceived by a *bamhanī* was born of a *khattiyāñī*; while, as Eckhart says of Christ, 'his birth of Mary ghostly was more pleasing to him than his birth of Mary in the flesh.' It will be observed that the temporal and eternal mothers are generally named alike, or in any case are alike. It is then in agreement with an established pattern that Saranyū, the daughter of Tvaṣṭṛ and to be identified with Sūryā, and her counterpart or transformation, are represented to be the immortal mother of Gods (Yama-Yamī) and the mortal mother of the Aśvins (who were 'not originally' Gods) and of

'Man.' Considered from this point of view the births of Yama (Yama-Yamī) and that of the Aśvins, who are respectively Sky and Earth *ab intra* and Sky and Earth *ab extra*, are not really, but only logically, two different births.

The whole story of Vivasvat and Saranyū is thus only a specialized variant of that of the Spiritual Person (*ātman, puruṣa*) whose 'two halves' (*pati-patnī*) are to be equated with Yama-Yamī=Agni and Earth in SB.VII.2.1.10, and with the Egyptian Zodiacal 'Twins' who are of opposite sex and are called the 'two halves' of the one solar deity (Budge, loc. cit.), of which two halves the 'wife' after giving birth to 'Men' (*manuṣyāḥ*, patronymic of Manu and thus 'the children of men') reflects that 'He produced me from himself, forsooth' (*mātmana eva janayitvā*, i.e. 'I am his daughter'), conceals herself (cf. *Cypria* 8, where Nemesis 'dislikes to lie in love with her father Zeus' and flies from him, assuming forms of fish and animals; and *Heracleitus Aph.*X, 'Nature loves to hide'), *and becomes a cow, a mare, 'and so on down to the ants,' the Spiritual Person (*ātman, puruṣa*)—whom she cannot elude—assuming corresponding forms and engendering corresponding offspring (BU.I.4.1.4). The theme survives in folklore in ballads of the type of 'The Twa Magicians' (Child, *English and Scottish Popular Ballads*, Boston, 1904, no.44) in which there occur such lines as 'Then she became a duck, And he became a rose-kaimed drake,' and there can be no doubt that the 'two magicians' are ultimately the Māyīnī (Sky and Earth, *māyīn* and *māyā*) who couple and bring forth the Babe (Agni) in RV.X.5.3, and equally the Māyīnī Nāsatyau (Aśvins) who are Agni's kindlers in RV.X.24.4.5, cited above.

It will follow from all that has been said above that SB.IV.1.5.16 is essentially correct in saying that the 'Aśvins are manifestly (or exoterically, *ab extra*) Sky and Earth.' See TS.V.6.4.1 'The Aśvins are these two' and SB.XII.9.1.12 'these two men that seem to be in the eyes pertain to the Aśvins'. If Yāska in turn explains them in more than one way, as Sky and Earth, Sun and Moon, Day and Night, or as Two Good Kings (*Nirukta* XII.1, cf.XII.10 and BD.VII.126), this by no means implies, what Macdonell sug-

*Hence, as Meister Eckhart says, 'to find Nature as she is in herself, all her forms must be shattered'. An imitation of natural forms is not an 'imitation of Nature.'—*Paroksha-priyā iva hi devāḥ*.

gested, that 'even the oldest commentators were puzzled' as to what the Aśvins were (Aśvins+'space' and *hearing*, see TS.V.6.4); on the contrary, the alternatives are valid examples of the 'conjugal names' by which, as we have seen, the Aśvins can be 'explained'. If we too cannot distinguish sharply between the three pairs of conjoint principles that are born of the Sun and Saranyū, Gandharva and Apsaras, whether as reality or shadow, this is not because we are 'puzzled' but because the distinction between the Twins in *divinis*, the cosmic twins, and the parts of the human syzygy is one of nature and not of essence. All these pairs are types of the Sacerdotium and the Regnum.

40. Cf. SB.X.4.1.5. Agni and Indra, Sacerdotium and Regnum speaking, *ekam nūpam ubhāv asāva*, 'let us twain become of one form' (with a view to procreation), cf. our 'be made one flesh'. *Sainbhū*, like *eko bhū* is to be unified'; hence both expressions have a marital significance, but can also mean to 'die', marriage implying the *trans*-formation of the second party, by assimilation.

41. The word *virāj* (from *rāj*, to 'shine' and 'rule', metaphysically coincident motions) is analogous to *vibhāsa*, 'shining forth' and to *śri* 'diffusing radiance'; any such shining being necessarily also a *Vibhava*, i.e. an extension of being in various directions, and thus 'omnipresence', whence also *vibhuti* as 'power' (cf. *exeimi*, 'proceed' and *exousia*, 'authority'; see also p. 10, note 30, p. 69 and *A New Approach to the Vedas*, p. 32). Furthermore, 'light is the progenitive power' (TS.VII.1.1.1 and SB.VIII.7.1.16), cf. Witelo, *Libri de intelligentis*, IX, 'The light is in each living thing the origin of its movement and life.' There can be no wonder that it is said of the *Virāj* (to be equated with Śrī and Greek *Hekatos* meaning 'far-shooting', certainly with reference to 'shafts of light') that 'the *Virāj* is this Earth and he who gets the most thereof becomes the chief' (*Śreṣṭhah*, also 'most glorious', SB.XII.6.1.40), cf. AB.VII.15 'behold the Sun's Fortune' (*sūryasya paśya śremānam*). She is 'the kingdom, the power and the glory' by which a Ruler rules. (On *Virāj* see Manu I.32,33—*tasyām sa virājam asrjat prabhuh*). *Virāj*, then, as Śrī, is identified with *Indrāṇī* 'the Person in the left eye', Indra being the Person in the right eye (BU.IV.2.3 and CU.IV.15 etc.) That in SB.III.1.3.11,14 Śuṣṇa or Vṛtra are the Person in the eye is to be understood in connection with the fact that Indra is now what Vṛtra was (SB.1.6.3.1.7). For the person in the eye, see Note 101, page 42 and also Plato *Alcibiades* I.133 and Philo, I.15. Further JUB.I.43.10 Person in the eye, Indra,

Prajapati; and in Rūmī, *Mathnawī* I.1679 where 'The real Man is nothing but the 'little man' in the pupil of the eye', i.e. II.100f 'my own image in thine Eye', and II.444 'make the child of your eye weep over your body'. Their place of union is the heart (*ib.*, and SB.X.5.2.11), and it is there in the heart (whether in our own heart or at the heart and capital of the external kingdom) in 'sleep'. i.e. the restraint of the sense powers, which are thus 'possessed' (as a King possesses his Fortune) that one becomes as it were a Great King and mover-at-will in his own realm (BU.II.1.17,18, cf. BG.V.13).

In our context, to which the text of AV.VIII.9.10 'who knoweth her progenitive-duality (*mithunatvam*)?' is so pertinent, cf. AV.II.36.3 where the wife 'should rule' (*vi rājatu*) her house, the *Virāj* is evidently (like Śrī) rather feminine than masculine, and corresponds to the *Virāj* of AV.VIII.9 and 10 where she is at once 'This' (Earth, World) and that Nature (*natura naturans*) from whom all things milk their specific qualities.

In TS.V.5.4.1 Sky and Earth are respectively the *svarāj* and the *virāj* (cf. CU.VII.25.2 *svarāj* and *anyarāj*), approximately Empire or Autocracy and 'Vice-royalty' or 'Kingship'; and it is, of course just in this sense that the supremacy of the *brahma* is related to that of the *kṣatra*.

Our text may also contain an allusion to the *Virāj* which is the Nourishment (*anna*) produced by the Sacrifice (JB.I.233.234, cf. II.82); and the probability of this is increased by the fact that JB.I.233 speaks of an excess of the *Yajña* over the *Virāj* as a fault, the phrase *virān nātiyaṣṭavya* suggesting the *tām sambhavann atyaricyata* of JUB.I.54.7 where it is evident that it is only when this unconformity has been corrected that they became the *Virāj*. *Virāj* is Mitra's, *Svarāj* is Varuna's, BD.VIII.107.

42. i.e. 'He has been born as my son'; whereas in BU.I.4.4 'He has begotten me of himself', i.e. 'I am his daughter', cf. note 39. Both are correct propositions, and both serve as the ground for the mother's withdrawal. The rebirth of the father as the son is in accordance with the Indian and universal doctrine of progenitive reincarnation and consequent consubstantiality of father and son; the wife who bears a son becoming thereby the husband's 'second mother' (*jananī punah*, AB.VII.13, cf. Mbh.I.68.47 [Poona ed.]).

43. Eckhart I.378, Pfeiffer 528—Der vater gebar sinen sun in der gotheit mit allen dinge = The father begat his Son into his Godhead with all things.

44. Cf.BU.I.5.12 From the union of the Sun and the Sky emanated the vital force, Prāṇa. It is Indra.

45. We have already (note 5) called attention to the assimilation of Mitra to Manas and of Varuṇa to Urvaśi in RV.VII.33.11 where the designation of Vasiṣṭha as 'the son of Mitra and Varuṇa' (*mitrāvaruṇa*) can only mean that a *mithunam* of Mitra and Varuṇa has taken place, as in PB.XXV.10, 10, or in other words that Urvaśi, thus *manasā abhigatā*, is Vāc. In PB.VII.8.1 it is equally clear that the birth of Vāma (*vāma=prāṇa* BU.I.5.12) 'amongst the Gods', i.e. the birth of Vāmadeva (the Ṛṣi of RV.IV.I.40), implies that a conjugation of Mitrāvaruṇau has taken place, which indeed explains the special connection of the Vāmadevya Sāman (Bṛhad Uktha) with sexual intercourse (*vāmadevyam mithune protam*, CU.II.13.2); cf.BU.IV.I.6 where Brahma as Manas betakes himself to 'the woman,' i.e. Vāc, and a son like himself is born of her, as also in PB.VII.6 where the father is Prajāpati; all these are versions of one and the same Ur-mythos.

46. From Mund.up.III.1.3, MU.VI.18, SB. XII.9.1.17 and PB. XXV.10.10, *brahmayoni* is the same as *varuṇayoni*, as Varuṇa is equated to Brahma in RV.VIII.41.8 and MU.VII.11

47. As implied by the Anukramanī to AV.VII.21, *mantroktāt-madēvatyam*, the Sun is here the Universal Spirit (*atmā jágatas tashūṣāś ca*) of RV.I.115.1, the Herdsman of RV.VII.60.2 (*sūryo . . . vīśvasya sthātūr jágatas ca gopā*, cf. note 34), the Universal Lord and Husband (*īśānām jágatas tashūṣas pátim, Sāyaṇa svāminam*) of RV.I.89.5, the 'multiple one' (*vīśvam ékam*) who 'plays the man' (*patyate, Sāyaṇa abhigacchati*, cf. Mitra, *brahma*, as *abhigantr* in SB.IV.1.4.1) to all that is in motion or at rest (*éjad dhruvám*, RV.III.54.8), and Parjanya of RV.VII.101.6: in other words, the divine Eros, Gandharva, Brahma to whom the whole creation is feminine, for 'All of us are the wives of one Lord, it is for Him that we shall adorn ourselves' (*ham sab nārī eka bhatāra, sab koi tāñi karai siṅgāra*, Kabir); just as considered individually the body is 'the sensitive image, daughter and bride' of the soul (V. da S. Pinto, *Peter Sterry, Puritan and Platonist*, pp. 166-7). See also note 70, p. 19 (111).

48. The Two Worlds (*imau lokau, dyāvāpṛthivī, rodasī, kṣāmā, etc.*), celestial and terrestrial, essential and natural, were originally one, as is often explicit and still more often implied by their 'separation'. This separation from one another, which is in order that there may be 'room' for a procedure from potentiality to act (TS.V.I.5.8,

SB.I.4.1.22-23) is variously brought about: but that the worlds are separated by the birth of the Sun, by Agni, Indrāgnī, Light or Lightning, the Axis Mundi (*skambha*) or the Bridge (*setu*), 'by Varuṇa's operation' or 'at the fiat of the Imperishable' (*aksara*), or at Dawn, are only different ways of saying the same thing.

Their fear or shyness of one another is generally connected with the incest motif, presupposed by the fact of their common origin, which makes them father and daughter and brother and sister, like Zeus and Hera: where there is 'no duality' (*advaita*), it is only with his own nature that the Deity can be united, and this could be avoided only at the price of dualism. It is, indeed, inasmuch as essence and nature are one in *divinis* that the act of creation has sometimes been thought of as auto-erotic. Cf. Orpheus in *Argonautica* I.494.

In addition to our observation in note 42, we remark that the Theotokos is necessarily feminine to God in every possible relation, as daughter, sister, mother and bride; and to note the Christian doctrine as resumed in Dante's 'O Virgin Mother, daughter of thy Son' (*Paradiso XXXIII.I*) and 'Bride of the Emperor of Heaven, and not bride alone but sister and most beloved daughter . . . existing in him in true and perfect fashion as if eternally wedded to him' (*Convito*, III.12); that is to say, in the same way that Prajāpati, the Progenitor, 'had Vāc alone as his own,' whom he only separated from himself as a mother of whom to be born (PB.VII.6; XX.14).

In ancient Roman Law the wife was said to stand to the husband in *filiiae loco*.

49. Vāc (Latin *vox*) as Theotokos is not here the Logos (Lat. *verbum*), but the means or organ by which the Logos (*bṛhad uktha*) is uttered.

The solar Prajāpati's own child-bearing precedes and must not be confused with the giving birth to the child by his consort. The normal doctrine about generation applies in *divinis* as much as in the world: it is that the father of all 'bears himself in himself' (*ātmān evātmānam bibharti*), and 'when he pours it into the woman as seed (*tad yadā striyām siñcati*) then he propagates it' (*athainaj janayati*) and her giving birth to it follows (AA.II.5). In PB.VII.6.1, X.3.1, XIII.11.18 and SB.II.5.1.3, accordingly, Prajāpati sees that the embryo is within him (*garbho . . . antarhitah*, cf. RV.III.57.3 *garbham asmin*, with reference to Agni as embryo) and then separates Vāc from himself as a mother of whom to be born; just as also in SB.VI.1.2.2, 6-11 he is specifically 'pregnant'

(*garbho antar āśit... garbhya abhavat*) and then uniting with Vāc 'expresses', *sṛjati*) those beings that he has conceived and of which she is to be the mother.

The same principles apply to the 'second birth' in *upanayana*, where the spiritual father makes the disciple 'an embryo within him (*garbham antas*) and bears him in his belly (*udare bibharti*) for three nights', after which he is born of Sāvitri as his mother (*ācārya* as *Agni*, see ŠB.XI.5.4.12, AV.XI.5.3 and Manu II.38, 170; also Hermes Trismegistus, *Libellus* XIII.2).

That both parents are thus thought of as child-bearing, i.e. 'carrying', so that we can speak of them as 'two wombs, one union' (*te dve yoni, ekam mithunam*, no more contradicts their sexual and functional differentiation (one only gives birth) than does the designation of the universal parents as *pitarā* or *matarā* in RV. *passim* imply that both are male or both female (their Supreme Identity, *tad ekam*, is of course androgynous), or than does the couvade (of which the father's child-bearing, as explained above is certainly the mythical basis) imply any distinctive femininity on the father's part, but rather that like the *brahma*, that is both the *brahma* and the *kṣatra*, he is thought of still as a first principle in which both natures are combined.

50. R. Eisler, 'Jahres Hochzeit mit der Sonne', *Orientalische Studien* (Mitth. der Vorderasiatischen Gesellschaft, pub. Fritz Heramet, II, 1918 pp. 21–70).

51. That the Br̥hat (i.e. Sun or Agni) is elsewhere regularly contrasted with the Rathantara (Vāc) as Heaven (m.) with Earth (f.) is to be explained by the fact that the Br̥hat—as 'unspoken Logos'—is originally 'within' Prajāpati (*me'yam antarhitah* PB.VII.6.2) and as much identical with himself as Vāc herself, whom Prajāpati 'contemplates as silence' (*tūṣṇīm manasā dhyāyāt* PB.VII.6.1) *ante principium*. Thus the Logos (Br̥hat) is related to the Voice as Theotokos—the Voice being that by which the Word is spoken—both as son to mother and as husband to wife: cf. Dante's 'O Virgin Mother, daughter of thy Son.'

52. It follows from all this that the familiar *mithunam* of Manas and Vāc by which a concept, originally formed in silence (PB.VII.6.1) is itself incestuous and metaphysically illegitimate. The formation of a concept implies distinction of subject and object, knower and known, essence and nature; it is only when these distinctions are transcended, only when knowledge of (*avidyā*) becomes a knowledge—as (*vidyā*) in *adequatio rei et intellectus*, only when knower, knowledge and known

are a single act of being, that knowledge can be spoken of as 'pure'—then the intellect, having attained to the form of truth, does not think, but perfectly contemplates the truth' (St. Thomas Aquinas, *Sum. Theol.* I.34.1 ad 2). 'But in no way can sense know this' (*ib.I.16.3*). Hence the expression 'Silence is golden', where silence should be understood to mean not merely not speaking, but not thinking.

53. Cf. my 'Tantric Doctrine of Divine Biunity', *Annals of the Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute*, Vol. XIX, 1938, pp. 173–183.

54. ŠB.VI.I.2.4 'By means of the Sun he entered into union with the Sky'; and ŠB.IX.3.1.3 'The Sky is the All, and Āditya (the Sun) is its man', also BU.I.5.12 of note 44.

55. Śāśvatī in Grassmann's sense 2. The designation of the Domains (Three Worlds) as 'Everlasting Dawns' (*śāśvatīḥ*) corresponds to that of the 'Three Realms of Light' as 'indestructible' (*dūṇḍśā*) in RV.III.56.8.

56. In full agreement with the Saṃhitā texts cited above, BD.I.71–73 explains that the 'Three World-Overlords' (*lokādhipatayah*) are not a plurality of principles but are distinguished only by their functions; there are not three distinct deities, but only 'severally named in accordance with their spheres': 'they arise from one another (*anyonyayonitāḥ*), all their 'participation' is in the Spirit' (*teṣām ātmaiva tat sarvam yad yad bhaktih*). This last is clearly an allusion to PB.XX.15.2, where the 'participations' or 'shares' of the Three Gandharvas are the Three Realms. It is with reference to these 'shares' that we find in JUB.I.7.2 *manasāī* 'nam (*pāpmānam bhrātrīyam*) nirbhajet.

For ŠB.VI.I.2.1–4 Agni, Vāyu, and Āditya are the forms that Prajāpati assumes in relation to Earth, Air, and Sky. AB.V.25 calls them the 'house-fathers' (*gr̥hapatayah*) of the Three Worlds (RV.I.26.7 *hotṛ gr̥hapatī*); CU.I.6.1–3 states the same relationships in terms of Sāman and Rc; the former as Agni, Vāyu, Āditya resting upon Earth, Air and Sky in the same sense that in AB.III.23 the one Sāman unites with the triple Rc. MU.IV.6, the *locus classicus* in the Upaniṣads for the *via affirmativa* and *via remotionis*, expands the *brahma vai trivṛt* of JUB.III.4.11 and calls Agni, Vāyu, and Āditya (identified with Brahmā, Rudra, and Viṣṇu) 'the foremost forms of the immortal, incorporeal Brahma': to whichever one of these a man is attached, his fruition is of a corresponding world (cf. BG.VII.23). But though one should contemplate and praise these forms of Brahma, thereby rising higher and higher in the worlds (cf. ŠB.VIII.7.1.23 where the Universal Lights

are stepping stones or rungs of the ladder—*samyānyah*—whereby to ascend or descend in these worlds), one should finally deny them, in order to attain to the unity of the Person (*puruṣa*).

The citations from the *Saṁhitās* amply suffice to show that these interpretations of the Vedic Trinity as a Triune Person are not the expressions of any 'later' monotheistic tendency, but simple restatements of Vedic doctrine. They are, furthermore, in whole agreement with RV. V.44.6 'It is just in accordance with his aspect that he is given names' (*yādīg evā dādr̥se tādīg ucyate*), cf. SB.X.5.2.20 'As he is approached, even such he becomes' (*yáthā-yathopásate tād evā bhavati*).

It is evident that the 'Three Gandharvas' are the 'Three-headed Gandharva,' the 'Three-headed Sun,' and that if three 'Universal Lights' can be distinguished by the theologian, 'there corresponds to all of them one single reality' (St. Thomas Aquinas, *Sum. Theol.*, I.13.4. *ad 2*), that of the unity of the Person, Brahma, Savitṛ, Prajāpati, Spirit, and Light of lights (*ātman*, *jyotiṣāṁ jyotis*, *jyotir uttamam*, etc.); the Father, Mover, Pastor (*gopā*, *govind* see Note 57), and Emperor of all that is in motion or at rest. The customary distinction of 'Hinduism' from 'Brahmanism' is essentially fallacious; it rests on nothing more than the modern historian's sense of an obligation to demonstrate an 'evolution' of thought.

The Hindu Trinity of Powers consists of a solar Father above, a fiery Son on earth (whence he ascends to heaven), and the Gale of their common spiration, and is thus indistinguishable from the Christian Trinity (it also corresponds to Plato's threefold constitution of the whole soul). It is even more exactly and in detail the equivalent of the Gnostic doctrine of the Three Christs or Triple Power: 'Viewing the cosmos as a tripartite unit (= *trivṛtam*, RV.X.114.1) . . . they taught that the Saviour was manifested in the three divisions in a form and manner suited to the mode of being and needs of each. . . In his capacity as *μονογενής* (*monogenes*, one in nature) he is related to the cosmos as a *whole*, while the designation Triple-Power signifies his association with the universe as triply divided' (Baynes, *Bruce Codex*, pp. 64, 77). Cf. BD.I.99,100 and BU.I.2.3 on the three forms of Agni. Cf. René Guénon. *La Grande Triade*, Chap. 17.

The Indologist's conviction of an Indian polytheism and pantheism is a residue of Christian prejudice surviving even in the rationalist. In a parallel connection Goodenough remarks: 'Philo himself was fully aware of the universal tendency in paganism toward the doctrine of a single supreme deity. In one place he says: "But if he exists whom with

one accord all Greeks and barbarians acknowledge together, the supreme Father of gods and men and the Maker of the whole universe, whose nature is invisible and hard to grasp not only by the eye but even by the mind". . . Coulson in his note on this passage cannot believe his eyes that Philo thus ascribes monotheism to all pagans. So far as I can see Philo was telling the simple truth as he saw it, not as Christian propaganda has ever since misrepresented it' (*An Introduction to Philo Judaeus*, p. 105).

It was not, however, at any rate not in India, that 'the approach to this monotheism had been by the reduction of individual deities to aspects of the single divine power', as Goodenough assumes: on the contrary, it was precisely the universality of the supreme deity that made it possible for local deities to be accepted as forms of That One (*tad ekam*) who is of many aspects (*purvanika*) and polynominal (*bhūrīṇi tava. . . nāma*, RV.III.20.3). It is only by a wilful disregard of Vedic dicta, an inadequate correlation of texts, and it must be added, a general ignorance of theology and of metaphysics, that any sort of plausibility can be given to the notion of a Vedic polytheism. *Ei polloi geloiotaton* (Hermes Trismegistus, *Lib. XI.1.11*)!

Cf. Plotinus, *Enneads*, IV.4.8; Dionysius, *De divinis nominibus*; St. Thomas Aquinas, *Sum. Theol.*, I.13.3 and especially I.31.2 'We do not say the only God, for deity is common to several'; also my 'Vedic Monotheism' in the *Journal of Indian History*, XV, 1936.

57. In the Buddhist story of the Bodhisatta Jotipāla ('Protector of the Light,' D.II.220 f.) the Purohitaship to which he succeeds is referred to as the *govindiya* (not in the PTS Dictionary), and the Purohita is the Mahā-Govinda (cf. *Sarva Siddhānta Saṅgraha* XII.54, *saccidānanda govinda-para mātmā*). This epithet does not mean 'high treasurer' as rendered by Malalasekara, for it was not the Purohita's function to act as treasurer: nor does it mean 'High Steward' in the special and literal sense of 'Lord of the Herds' as is suggested in *Dialogues* 2.226. It much rather means 'Shepherd of the Flock' or 'Pastor' in that sense in which the Sun, Agni, or Brhaspati is the 'Herdsman of the World' (*jagatas* or *bhūvanasya gopā*), and in that of John X.14 'I am the good shepherd and know my sheep.' The pastorate of a kingdom reflects the herding of the 'unfaltering Herdsman' (*gopām*, RV.I.164.31, cf. JUB.III.37. I and III. 29.6 AV.VII.53.2, Agni: *gopā adhipā vasishthah*, that of 'the Herdsman of the world, the Knower, whose kine are never lost' (*vidvān ānaśṭapaśur bhūvanasya gopāḥ*, RV.X.17.3, where *vidvān gopāḥ* is just what *govit*,

are stepping stones or rungs of the ladder—*samyāryah*—whereby to ascend or descend in these worlds), one should finally deny them, in order to attain to the unity of the Person (*puruṣa*).

The citations from the *Samhitās* amply suffice to show that these interpretations of the Vedic Trinity as a Triune Person are not the expressions of any 'later' monotheistic tendency, but simple restatements of Vedic doctrine. They are, furthermore, in whole agreement with RV.V.44.6 'It is just in accordance with his aspect that he is given names' (*yādīg evā dādr̥se tādīg ucyate*), cf. SB.X.5.2.20 'As he is approached, even such he becomes' (*yāthā-yathopásate tād evā bhavati*).

It is evident that the 'Three Gandharvas' are the 'Three-headed Gandharva,' the 'Three-headed Sun,' and that if three 'Universal Lights' can be distinguished by the theologian, 'there corresponds to all of them one single reality' (St. Thomas Aquinas, *Sum. Theol.*, I.13.4. *ad 2*), that of the unity of the Person, Brahma, Savitṛ, Prajāpati, Spirit, and Light of lights (*ātman*, *jyotiṣām jyotis*, *jyotir uttamam*, etc.); the Father, Mover, Pastor (*gopā*, *govind* see Note 57), and Emperor of all that is in motion or at rest. The customary distinction of 'Hinduism' from 'Brahmanism' is essentially fallacious; it rests on nothing more than the modern historian's sense of an obligation to demonstrate an 'evolution' of thought.

The Hindu Trinity of Powers consists of a solar Father above, a fiery Son on earth (whence he ascends to heaven), and the Gale of their common spiration, and is thus indistinguishable from the Christian Trinity (it also corresponds to Plato's threefold constitution of the whole soul). It is even more exactly and in detail the equivalent of the Gnostic doctrine of the Three Christs or Triple Power: 'Viewing the cosmos as a tripartite unit (= *trivṛtam*, RV.X.114.1) . . . they taught that the Saviour was manifested in the three divisions in a form and manner suited to the mode of being and needs of each. . . In his capacity as *μονογενής* (*monogenes*, one in nature) he is related to the cosmos as a *whole*, while the designation Triple-Power signifies his association with the universe as triply divided' (Baynes, *Bruce Codex*, pp. 64, 77). Cf. BD.I.99,100 and BU.I.2.3 on the three forms of Agni. Cf. René Guénon. *La Grande Triade*, Chap. 17.

The Indologist's conviction of an Indian polytheism and pantheism is a residue of Christian prejudice surviving even in the rationalist. In a parallel connection Goodenough remarks: 'Philo himself was fully aware of the universal tendency in paganism toward the doctrine of a single supreme deity. In one place he says: "But if he exists whom with

one accord all Greeks and barbarians acknowledge together, the supreme Father of gods and men and the Maker of the whole universe, whose nature is invisible and hard to grasp not only by the eye but even by the mind". . . Coulsen in his note on this passage cannot believe his eyes that Philo thus ascribes monotheism to all pagans. So far as I can see Philo was telling the simple truth as he saw it, not as Christian propaganda has ever since misrepresented it' (*An Introduction to Philo Judas*, p. 105).

It was not, however, at any rate not in India, that 'the approach to this monotheism had been by the reduction of individual deities to aspects of the single divine power', as Goodenough assumes: on the contrary, it was precisely the universality of the supreme deity that made it possible for local deities to be accepted as forms of That One (*tad ekam*) who is of many aspects (*purvanīka*) and polynominal (*bhūrīni tava. . . nāma*, RV.III.20.3). It is only by a wilful disregard of Vedic dicta, an inadequate correlation of texts, and it must be added, a general ignorance of theology and of metaphysics, that any sort of plausibility can be given to the notion of a Vedic polytheism. *Ei polloi geloiotaton* (Hermes Trismegistus, *Lib. XI.1.11*).

Cf. Plotinus, *Enneads*, IV.4.8; Dionysius, *De divinis nominibus*; St. Thomas Aquinas, *Sum. Theol.*, I.13.3 and especially I.31.2 'We do not say the only God, for deity is common to several'; also my 'Vedic Monotheism' in the *Journal of Indian History*, XV, 1936.

57. In the Buddhist story of the Bodhisatta Jotipāla ('Protector of the Light,' D.II.220 f.) the Purohitaship to which he succeeds is referred to as the *govindiya* (not in the PTS Dictionary), and the Purohita is the Mahā-Govinda (cf. *Sarva Siddhānta Saṅgraha* XII.54, *saccidānanda govinda-para mātmā*). This epithet does not mean 'high treasurer' as rendered by Malalasekara, for it was not the Purohita's function to act as treasurer: nor does it mean 'High Steward' in the special and literal sense of 'Lord of the Herds' as is suggested in *Dialogues* 2.226. It much rather means 'Shepherd of the Flock' or 'Pastor' in that sense in which the Sun, Agni, or Bṛhaspati is the 'Herdsman of the World' (*jagatas* or *bhuwanasya gopā*), and in that of John X.14 'I am the good shepherd and know my sheep.' The pastorate of a kingdom reflects the herding of the 'unfaltering Herdsman' (*gopām*, RV.I.164.31, cf. JUB.III.37. I and III. 29.6 AV.VII.53.2, Agni: *gopā adhipā vasiṣṭhah*, that of 'the Herdsman of the world, the Knower, whose kine are never lost' (*vidvān ānaśapasaśur bhuwanasya gopāḥ*, RV.X.17.3, where *vidvān gopāḥ* is just what *govit*,

govindu, and *govinda* mean). That 'his is a herdsman's tongue' (*gopājihvasya*, RV.III.38.9) is as much as to say that the flock knows his voice and follows him (as in John X.4 and 27).

We digress to remark that the notion of a divine shepherd may well be of high antiquity, going back to the earliest pastoral times. The notion of a divine pastor and of an analogous human pastorate is one of the very many formulae common to Egyptian, Platonic and Vedic philosophy, nor is there anything in either of these forms of the *Philosophia Perennis* that can be called unique. There is an art of herding human beings, royal and statesmanlike (*Statesman*, 267 C); at the beginning of a new 'period' (=Skr. *kalpa* or *manvantara*), and during the rule of Kronos (the father and predecessor of Zeus), 'God himself was the herdsman of men, watching over them' (*ib.* 271 E); 'the type of the divine shepherd (*theios poimēn*) is greater than that of the king' (*ib.* 275 E. cf. *Republic* 440D where the brave and eager principle, the lover of victory—i.e. the Kṣatriya and *jīṣṇu* part of the soul—is the ruling shepherd's 'dog'). The royal art is one of 'judgement and watching over' (*Statesman* 292B). In all these statements, of course, we must not be misled by the word 'royal', because Plato's conception of government is essentially theocratic (*Laws* 713E, cf. *Republic* 431B, *Meno* 99F), and by 'king' he means priest—or philosopher-king, or in any case a government by both in complete agreement (*Republic*, 473 f., cf. *Statesman* 290E). In Christianity the Good Shepherd is 'both king and priest, Thy kingdom come' (Mat.VI.9): where the Priesthood and the Kingship move together in one accord (*yatra brahma ca kṣatram ca samyāñcau carataḥ saha*), that holy world I fain would know' (VS.XX.5, cf. note 18 p. 50). The government and care of men is preeminently the sacerdotal function, but in so far as the royal function is delegated to a king the latter can also be called a shepherd of men, as in some of the Indian texts where the king too is a *gopā*. We need hardly add that Kṛṣṇa's epithet Govinda, and that he is the 'Divine Cowherd', do not mean that he was in any historical sense a herdsman by caste but that he is a solar hero, and like the Bodhisattva a 'descent of the Sun.'

To return to India, Brhaspati is 'our far-seeing Herdsman and pathfinder' (*no gopāḥ pathikṛd vicakṣanah*), RV.II.23.6 and *gāḥ pra astau uta ca vidvān agāyat*, RV.X. 67.3), Agni 'Lord authentic (*rājasī tvam pārthivasya paśupā iva tmanā*, RV.I.144.6) of Sky and Earth and as it were their Herdsman', 'Thou who at birth didst look about upon the

worlds, even as a lively herdsman that goeth round about his kine (RV.VII.13.3, *devah savitā trāyamāṇah*, VII.35.10, and Brhaspati as Gopati liberates cattle, X.67.8). The human Purohita is, as we know, the embodiment and representative of this Agni-Brhaspati, and naturally exercises similar functions; he is the Pastor of the Flock, or 'Shepherd of the Realm' (*rāstragopā*); the marriage of the King to the Priest is the 'restoration (*pūnardāya*) of the Brāhmaṇa's wife', and it is when this restitution has been made that 'then the Kṣatriya's realm is warded' (*rāstram gupitam kṣatriyasya*, RV.X.109.3). On PB.VI.6.1 Caland equates *rāstram* with *kṣatram*.

A brief expansion of the last remark may be useful. Sāyaṇa's explanation of RV.X.109 (Griffith's 'unintelligible fragment, and of comparatively late origin!') is excellent. The Brahmā's (Vācaspati's) wife is Vāc. Misled (*de-duced* from her proper allegiance) by one 'who can approach her only in sin' (RV.X.71.9) the royal Voice is no longer an expression of the Truth, but on the contrary subverts the whole cosmic order. This evil is corrected when 'Agni as Hotṛ takes her hand and leads her' (*hastagrhyā nināya*, i.e. marries her,—in the person of the King). It is precisely this *reductio regni ad sacerdotium* that is effected in the Rājasūya, in the ritual marriage of the King and the Purohita; and it is only when this marriage has been accomplished that 'the realm is guarded (*rāstram gupitam*, AV.V.17.3), i.e by the Brahmā as *rāstragopā*, as a wife is guarded by her husband. (cf. *Apālā (vāc)* restored to Vṛtra-Soma, the Brāhmaṇa). The reference to the 'ladle' in RV.X.109.5 is to the performance of the Sacrifice in which King Soma is now cooperative (*savrata*) with Agni; the King whose open hand is as it were a sacrificial ladle (see note 50) is no longer one of 'those who do not offer the libation' (*nā sutēkarāsah*, RV.X.71.9).

The marital values of *nī* and *upanī* (to 'lead', and to 'lead up', 'reduce', or 'induct') will not be overlooked: the husband is in relation to the wife the 'Duke' (*nāyaka*), she is the 'Duchess' (*nāyakī*). All reductions of effects to causes are marital reunions. The *upanayana* of a disciple by a master is an *audgrabbhana* or 'lifting up' and 'exaltation', and we have no doubt that the traditional marriage is really an initiation of the woman, comparable to that of a *brahmacārin* by the *ācārya*, or, that both 'inductions' are 'mysteries'; cf. *teleō* etc., in the related senses to 'perfect', 'initiate', 'be married', 'die'. Cf. note 40. It may well be asked whether *nīti*, 'leading' and *rājanīti*, 'King's leading' as designations of the 'Art of Government' do not contain an explicit reference to the discipular and marital relation of the King to the

Purohita, his Guru. In our hymn, RV.X.109.4b and 5a the reunion of the *kṣatra* and *brahma* is expressly assimilated to the *upanayana* of a *brahmacārin* by an *ācārya*, and this is in agreement with the disciple to master relationship of the King to the Priest explicit in the Arthaśāstra (see note 31). We know already that the King's marriage to the Brāhman is part of a sacrificial rite and involves an initiation (*dikṣā*). Now the induction of the disciple by the master is also an affiliation by which the former is made directly a foster-son of the master and his wife and by analogy a foster-son of God and his consort. 'The mother is Sāvitrī, the *ācārya* the father' Manu, II.170, 171, cf. AV.XI.5.3). The parallel may be noted in Hermes Trismegistus, *Lib.* XIII where 'the mother is Sophia . . . the will of God the inseminator . . . some man who is a son of God the mediator in this palingenesis'. The master (*ācārya*) is a Brāhman, that is to say a 'son of Brahma', 'son of God' (as the patronymic *brāhmaṇa* states) and represents Savitṛ, the *brahma*; in the same way the master's wife is the representative of Sāvitrī, Vāc, as *brahmajāyā*, 'the Brāhman's wife' in our hymn. The pupil becomes a member of their household, in which he is fostered. In this connection it may be observed that there can be little doubt that the ancient European custom of 'fostering' (of which our 'boarding schools' are a late secular survival or superstition) originally involved an initiation. If marriage is also an affiliation we can see why it is that the wife has been traditionally said to stand to her husband, who is also her Guru, *in loco filiae*, originally a metaphysical and afterwards a legal formula; the fact of marriage making her a 'daughter'. These conditions are still reflected in the fact that a Priest addresses the members of his flock as 'My son' or 'My daughter', and is himself addressed as 'Father', and why a nun is addressed as 'Mother', or 'Sister'. And if the King's 'marriage' to the Brāhman is strictly analogous to the induction of a disciple by a master, we can as easily see that his seduction of 'the Brāhman's wife' (Vāc, Sāvitrī, Sophia) in RV.X.109 is analogous to that of a master's wife by a disciple, for which such dire penance is imposed (Manu IX.237, 238, XI.104.107).

The word *govinda* is not (as inferred by the PTS [Pali Text Society] Dictionary and in the Dialogues) the equivalent of a Sanskrit *gavendra* but, in accordance with Pāṇini (III.I.138, Vārtt. 2), of *govit*, 'one who knows, or finds kine' and to be correlated with *gaves*, to 'wish, or seek for kine'; the word division is *go-vinda*, analogous to *go-pā*, *go-pati* and *paśu-pā*. Moreover, *go* and *paśu*, while literally 'herd', 'cattle', 'flock', do not by any means always mean 'animals' other than men, but often

refer to 'man' himself, the animal man, and are thus used as the equivalent of *prajā*, 'children (of men)', as in AV.XIV.2.25 where the children of the bride are referred to as *paśāvah*, in AA.II.3.2 where *paśāvah* denotes both animals in general and the animal man as distinguished from a 'person', and in BU.I.4.10 where the man who has not realised 'I am Brahma', and therefore approaches some God as 'another than himself', is called a *paśu*, an 'animal' fitted only to be regarded as food for the Gods.

58. Released from death in the Agnihotra, ŚB.II.3.3.9, more fully explained in ŚB.X.2.6.6.7.

59. 'Dies no more' corresponds to the 'O king, live for ever' of several Old Testament contexts; cf. note 37. The present is one of the many passages (e.g. ŚB.II.3.3.9) in which the connection of *punar-mṛtyu*, 'recurrent death', is not with a future but with his present life. The particular context is paralleled by that of ŚB.V.4.1.1. where 'He who performs the Rājasūya escapes all death (*sárvān . . . mṛtyān átimucyate*), all assaults (*sárvān badhān*), only old age is his death' (*tásya jaraivā mṛtyūr bhavati*); cf. note 37. The deaths referred to are the same as the *sarve mṛtyavah* (Caland, 'Todesarten, Lebensgefahren', cf. *Iliad*, XII. 322, 'the myriads of fates of death that beset us') of JB.II.419, where they are to be avoided by 'not deviating from the divine marriage, the sacrifice, etc.' (*daivyāt sma vivāhān meta. . . yajñāt sma meta*). Thus one who is forearmed by initiation and sacrifice may be called 'undying' (*amṛta*) 'even though he has no hope of never dying at all' (ŚB.II.2.2.14), a hope that he could not have, because 'no one becomes immortal in the flesh' (ŚB.X.4.3.9). Cf. A.IV.320 - 'peril of dying ever present'; and TS.V.6.3.1 'wherever death is born, thence he removes it by sacrifice; accordingly the piler of the Fire lives out his whole life.'

Where we speak nowadays of 'surviving a mortal danger' the traditional philosophy sees an actual death and rebirth; thus in TS.II.3.5.3 it is with the words 'His birth is renewed again and again' (RV.X.85.19 *nava nava bhavati jāyamānah*) that the life (*āyus*) of the sick man is restored. (Cf. St. Paul on the 'inner' and 'outer' man). All life, as a 'becoming' (*bhava*, *genesis* and *otrochos tēs geneseōs*), involves the repeated death of what has been and birth of what is: reincarnation (in this legitimate sense of the word) belonging as much to this present life as to any other form of temporal existence. The application of the words 'sure is the death of what has been born, and sure the birth of what has died' (BG.II.27, and the basis of Socrates' argument for the

Purohita, his Guru. In our hymn, RV.X.109.4b and 5a the reunion of the *kṣatra* and *brahma* is expressly assimilated to the *upanayana* of a *brahmacārin* by an *ācārya*, and this is in agreement with the disciple to master relationship of the King to the Priest explicit in the Arthaśāstra (see note 31). We know already that the King's marriage to the Brāhmaṇa is part of a sacrificial rite and involves an initiation (*dikṣā*). Now the induction of the disciple by the master is also an affiliation by which the former is made directly a foster-son of the master and his wife and by analogy a foster-son of God and his consort. 'The mother is Sāvitrī, the *ācārya* the father' Manu, II.170, 171, cf. AV.XI.5.3), The parallel may be noted in Hermes Trismegistus, *Lib.* XIII where 'the mother is Sophia . . . the will of God the inseminator. . . some man who is a son of God the mediator in this palingenesis'. The master (*ācārya*) is a Brāhmaṇa, that is to say a 'son of Brahma', 'son of God' (as the patronymic *brāhmaṇa* states) and represents Savitṛ, the *brahma*; in the same way the master's wife is the representative of Sāvitrī, Vāc, as *brahmajāyā*, 'the Brāhmaṇa's wife' in our hymn. The pupil becomes a member of their household, in which he is fostered. In this connection it may be observed that there can be little doubt that the ancient European custom of 'fostering' (of which our 'boarding schools' are a late secular survival or superstition) originally involved an initiation. If marriage is also an affiliation we can see why it is that the wife has been traditionally said to stand to her husband, who is also her Guru, *in loco filiae*, originally a metaphysical and afterwards a legal formula; the fact of marriage making her a 'daughter'. These conditions are still reflected in the fact that a Priest addresses the members of his flock as 'My son' or 'My daughter', and is himself addressed as 'Father', and why a nun is addressed as 'Mother', or 'Sister'. And if the King's 'marriage' to the Brāhmaṇa is strictly analogous to the induction of a disciple by a master, we can as easily see that his seduction of 'the Brāhmaṇa's wife' (Vāc, Sāvitrī, Sophia) in RV.X.109 is analogous to that of a master's wife by a disciple, for which such dire penance is imposed (Manu IX.237, 238, XI.104.107).

The word *govinda* is not (as inferred by the PTS [Pali Text Society] Dictionary and in the Dialogues) the equivalent of a Sanskrit *gavendra* but, in accordance with Pāṇini (III.I.138, Vārtt. 2), of *govit*, 'one who knows, or finds kine' and to be correlated with *gaveś*, to 'wish, or seek for kine': the word division is *go-vinda*, analogous to *go-pā*, *go-pati* and *paśu-pā*. Moreover, *go* and *paśu*, while literally 'herd', 'cattle', 'flock', do not by any means always mean 'animals' other than men, but often

refer to 'man' himself, the animal man, and are thus used as the equivalent of *prajā*, 'children (of men)', as in AV.XIV.2.25 where the children of the bride are referred to as *paśavāḥ*, in AA.II.3.2 where *paśavāḥ* denotes both animals in general and the animal man as distinguished from a 'person', and in BU.I.4.10 where the man who has not realised 'I am Brahma', and therefore approaches some God as 'another than himself', is called a *paśu*, an 'animal' fitted only to be regarded as food for the Gods.

58. Released from death in the Agnihotra, ŠB.II.3.3.9, more fully explained in ŠB.X.2.6.6.7.

59. 'Dies no more' corresponds to the 'O king, live for ever' of several Old Testament contexts; cf. note 37. The present is one of the many passages (e.g. ŠB.II.3.3.9) in which the connection of *punar-mṛtyu*, 'recurrent death', is not with a future but with his present life. The particular context is paralleled by that of ŠB.V.4.I.I. where 'He who performs the Rājasūya escapes all death (*sárvān . . . mṛtyān átimucyate*), all assaults (*sárvān badhān*), only old age is his death' (*tásya jaraivā mṛtyūr bhavati*); cf. note 37. The deaths referred to are the same as the *sarve mṛtyavāḥ* (Caland, 'Todesarten, Lebensgefahren', cf. *Iliad*, XII. 322, 'the myriads of fates of death that beset us') of JB.II.419, where they are to be avoided by 'not deviating from the divine marriage, the sacrifice, etc.' (*daivyāt sma vivāhān meta. . . yajñāt sma meta*). Thus one who is forearmed by initiation and sacrifice may be called 'undying' (*amṛta*) 'even though he has no hope of never dying at all' (ŠB.II.2.2.14), a hope that he could not have, because 'no one becomes immortal in the flesh' (ŠB.X.4.3.9). Cf. A.IV.320 -'peril of dying ever present'; and TS.V.6.3.1 'wherever death is born, thence he removes it by sacrifice; accordingly the piler of the Fire lives out his whole life.'

Where we speak nowadays of 'surviving a mortal danger' the traditional philosophy sees an actual death and rebirth; thus in TS.II.3.5.3 it is with the words 'His birth is renewed again and again' (RV.X.85.19 *novo novo bhavati jāyamānah*) that the life (*āyus*) of the sick man is restored. (Cf. St. Paul on the 'inner' and 'outer' man). All life, as a 'becoming' (*bhava*, *genesis* and *otrochos tēs geneseōs*), involves the repeated death of what has been and birth of what is: reincarnation (in this legitimate sense of the word) belonging as much to this present life as to any other form of temporal existence. The application of the words 'sure is the death of what has been born, and sure the birth of what has died' (BG.II.27, and the basis of Socrates' argument for the

survival of the soul, in *Phaedo*) is as much to daily living as to the special cases of rebirth from a mother, initiatory palingenesis, and 'death when the time comes'. Living (*ex-istence, esse*) is a repeated resurrection; life eternal has neither rebirth nor recurrent death, because it is not a becoming, but an immutable being (*essentia*). Cf. Plato, *Euthydemus*—All change is a dying'.

In all this there is nothing peculiarly Indian. The 'immortality', or rather 'not-dying', envisaged by the Indian texts in which it means 'living out the whole of one's life' (*manuṣyasyāmr̥tatvam yat sarvam āyur eti*, ŚB.IX.5.1.10; *agnihotra* gives full life, ŚB.XII.4.2.7; and a hundred years tantamount to *amṛtam, anantam, aparimitam*, ŚB.I.9.3.18, X.1.5.4); and this is to be distinguished from an 'incorruptible immortality in the world of heavenly light' (*amṛtatvam akṣitīm svarge loke*, KB.XIII.9 and XIV.4)—the two are analogous but not to be confused—is exactly the same as the 'immortality' (not-dying) described to Socrates in the *Symposium* 207 D-208 B (also in *Phaedo* 87D as in BG.XV.7-11 and Eckhart): 'The mortal nature ever seeks, as best it can, to be immortal. In one way only can it succeed, and that is by becoming or generation (*genesis*)—a term which may be intended to cover both ordinary 'becoming', and also 'progenitive reincarnation'; both involve a kind of 'never dying'); since so it can always leave over a new creature in place of the old. . . . Every mortal thing is preserved in this way; not by keeping it exactly the same for ever, like the divine, but by replacing what absconds or is inveterated with something else new in the semblance of the original. Through this device, Socrates (*Theatetus* 155t), a mortal thing partakes of immortality, both in the body and in all other respects; by no other means can it be done'. Similarly Plutarch, *Moralia*, 302D. This also represents the Buddhist conception of living: a repeated dissolution as one thing followed by reappearance as another (*tathā ratti�ā divasassa ca aīñad eva upajjati aīñam nirujjhati*, S.II.96), thus overcoming recurrent death as in ŚB.II.3.3.9 cited above and in JB.I.13 (cf.I.5) *punarmṛtyū atimucyate yad ahorātre*, 'he escapes recurrent death in that he (sacrifices) night and morning'. The idea of a 'participation' in immortality occurs already in RV.I.164.21; It is the same as that of the participation of existence in being, and that of the participation of the beautiful in beauty.

Thus, that the King is made 'undying' is not merely a rhetorical and flattering expression, but has a meaning; it does not mean that he will never die, but that he will not die prematurely.

60. Prayer to Agni: light for Brāhmaṇas, Kings, Vaiśyas and Śūdras, ŚB.VII.4.2.21, IX.4.2.14.

61. The Vāstoṣpati, equated to Rudra (TS.III.4.10.3), who is *vratapā* and associated with the *brahma* in RV.X.61.7 is evidently the Indra of RV.VIII.97.10: and the same as the *kṣetrasya pati* of RV.X.66.13, VII.35.10 and IV.57.3. The Vāstoṣpati of RV.VII.54.1 and 55.1 may be Soma (though Sāyaṇa equates *indu* in RV.VIII.69.1 with Indra), but even so still represents the *kṣatra*.

62. As was pointed out by Weber, *Indische Studien* V.216 the formula *Ego sum Gaius, tuis Gaia* [I am Gaius (masculine), you are Gaia (feminine)] was employed in ancient Roman usage. (Cicero, *Murena* 12 fin. mentions the custom.

Valerius Maximus, *De praenominibus*, has: *Ferunt enim Gaiam Caeciliam, Tarquini Prisci regis uxorem, optimam lanificam fuisse et ideo institutum, ut novae nuptiae ante januam interrogatae quaenam vocarentur Gaias esse se dicent*. Cf. Plutarch, *Quaestiones Romanae*, XXX, and the note in the edition by H.T. Rose, Oxford, 1924.

Valerius Maximus, *Concerning First Names*, has: They proposed that Caecilia Gaia, the wife of the King Priscius Tarquinius, was the best spinner, and thus it was established that new brides were asked before the door, 'what are you called?', and they should say that they are Gaia. Cf. Plutarch, *Roman Questions*, XXX, and the note in the edition by H.T. Rose, Oxford, 1924.

63. For references to all the parallel versions and variants see Whitney in *HOS*, XIV.766-7.

64. If we compare this with the archetypal marriage of Sūryā (to whom the human bride is always assimilated) to Soma, we find that at her marriage 'the 'potentiality' (*kṛtyā*, spell, enchantment, etc.) that clings to her is removed; her relations prosper; her husband is secured by obligations. 'Cast away the soiled garment, give largesse unto Brahmanas',—for this 'potentiality' hath gotten feet (*padvatī bhūtvī*) and as a wife attends her husband'.

It is clear from this 'gotten feet' that the bride's 'potential' form is thought of.

Facere= Sacra facere when, and only when the act of kind is referred to its paradigm *in divinis*, 'the act of fecundation latent in eternity.' 'Thy will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven. . . . Heaven and Earth shall be in those days as Husband and Wife, tho' one Principle, Nature and Shape, yet two Sexes, one the Image of the other, and two Persons, each having

survival of the soul, in *Phaedo*) is as much to daily living as to the special cases of rebirth from a mother, initiatory palingenesis, and 'death when the time comes'. Living (*ex-istence, esse*) is a repeated resurrection; life eternal has neither rebirth nor recurrent death, because it is not a becoming, but an immutable being (*essentia*). Cf. Plato, *Euthydemus*—All change is a dying'.

In all this there is nothing peculiarly Indian. The 'immortality', or rather 'not-dying', envisaged by the Indian texts in which it means 'living out the whole of one's life' (*manuṣyasyāmr̥tatvam* *yat sarvam āyur eti*, SB.IX.5.1.10; *agnihotra* gives full life, SB.XII.4.2.7; and a hundred years tantamount to *amṛtam*, *anantam*, *aparimitam*, SB.I.9.3.18, X.1.5.4); and this is to be distinguished from an 'incorruptible immortality in the world of heavenly light' (*amṛtatvam akṣitīm svarge loka*, KB.XIII.9 and XIV.4)—the two are analogous but not to be confused—is exactly the same as the 'immortality' (not-dying) described to Socrates in the *Symposium* 207 D-208 B (also in *Phaedo* 87D as in BG.XV.7-11 and Eckhart): 'The mortal nature ever seeks, as best it can, to be immortal. In one way only can it succeed, and that is by becoming or generation (*genesis*)—a term which may be intended to cover both ordinary 'becoming', and also 'progenitive reincarnation'; both involve a kind of 'never dying'); since so it can always leave over a new creature in place of the old. . . . Every mortal thing is preserved in this way; not by keeping it exactly the same for ever, like the divine, but by replacing what absconds or is inveterated with something else new in the semblance of the original. Through this device, Socrates (*Theatetus* 155t), a mortal thing partakes of immortality, both in the body and in all other respects; by no other means can it be done'. Similarly Plutarch, *Moralia*, 302D. This also represents the Buddhist conception of living: a repeated dissolution as one thing followed by reappearance as another (*tām rattiya divasassa ca aññad eva upajjati aññam nirujjhati*, S.II.96), thus overcoming recurrent death as in SB.II.3.3.9 cited above and in JB.I.13 (cf.I.5) *punarmṛtyū atimucyate yad ahorātre*, 'he escapes recurrent death in that he (sacrifices) night and morning'. The idea of a 'participation' in immortality occurs already in RV.I.164.21; It is the same as that of the participation of existence in being, and that of the participation of the beautiful in beauty.

Thus, that the King is made 'undying' is not merely a rhetorical and flattering expression, but has a meaning; it does not mean that he will never die, but that he will not die prematurely.

60. Prayer to Agni: light for Brāhmaṇas, Kings, Vaiśyas and Śūdras, SB.VII.4.2.21, IX.4.2.14.

61. The Vāstoṣpati, equated to Rudra (TS.III.4.10.3), who is *vratapā* and associated with the *brahma* in RV.X.61.7 is evidently the Indra of RV.VIII.97.10: and the same as the *kṣetrasya pati* of RV.X.66.13, VII.35.10 and IV.57.3. The Vāstoṣpati of RV.VII.54.1 and 55.1 may be Soma (though Sāyaṇa equates *indu* in RV.VIII.69.1 with Indra), but even so still represents the *kṣatra*.

62. As was pointed out by Weber, *Indische Studien* V.216 the formula *Ego sum Gaius, tuis Gaia* [I am Gaius (masculine), you are Gaia (feminine)] was employed in ancient Roman usage. (Cicero, *Murena* 12 fin. mentions the custom.

Valerius Maximus, *De praenominibus*, has: *Ferunt enim Gaiam Caeciliam, Tarquini Prisci regis uxorem, optimam lanificam fuisse et ideo institutum, ut novae nuptiae ante januam interrogatae quaenam vocarentur Gaias esse se dicent*. Cf. Plutarch, *Quaestiones Romanae*, XXX, and the note in the edition by H.T. Rose, Oxford, 1924.

Valerius Maximus, *Concerning First Names*, has: They proposed that Caecilia Gaia, the wife of the King Priscius Tarquinius, was the best spinner, and thus it was established that new brides were asked before the door, 'what are you called?', and they should say that they are Gaia. Cf. Plutarch, *Roman Questions*, XXX, and the note in the edition by H.T. Rose, Oxford, 1924.

63. For references to all the parallel versions and variants see Whitney in *HOS*, XIV.766-7.

64. If we compare this with the archetypal marriage of Sūryā (to whom the human bride is always assimilated) to Soma, we find that at her marriage 'the 'potentiality' (*kṛtyā*, spell, enchantment, etc.) that clings to her is removed; her relations prosper; her husband is secured by obligations. 'Cast away the soiled garment, give largesse unto Brahmaṇas',—for this 'potentiality' hath gotten feet (*padvatī bhūtvī*) and as a wife attends her husband'.

It is clear from this 'gotten feet' that the bride's 'potential' form is thought of.

Facere= Sacra facere when, and only when the act of kind is referred to its paradigm in *divinis*, 'the act of fecundation latent in eternity.' 'Thy will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven. . . . Heaven and Earth shall be in those days as Husband and Wife, tho' one Principle, Nature and Shape; yet two Sexes, one the Image of the other; and two Persons, each having

the entire Principle, Nature, and Shape, Distinctly, and Compleatly in itself, Peter Sterry in Vivian da Sola Pinto, *Peter Sterry, Puritan and Platonist*, 1934, p. 200.

65. *Sa* being masculine, we follow Keith in rendering *ama* and *sa* by 'That' and 'This' (which are often the terms in which Heaven and Earth are referred to). The marriage formula (see above, and note 63) elsewhere has *sā*, 'She', and it may be that, as Keith suggests, *sa* is an error for *sā*: we are inclined, however, to think that the masculine *sa* is the result of an attraction to the actual and obvious sex of the person addressed, for we must not overlook that the marriage formula is here applied to the case of two persons both of whom are empirically male, and that the words are spoken here only 'as if' by a man to a woman. For *sā+tama* see AB III.23 and JUB.1.53.

Sky (*dyaus*) and Harmony or Music (*sāman*) are always masculine to Earth (*prthivī*) and Words (*ṛc*). In SB.IV.6.7.11 for example, 'There in the *sadas* that male, the Sāma, approaches that female, the Rc' (*tād vā etād vṛṣā sāma yōśām ṛcam śadasy ádhyaeti*), the reference being to the congress of Manas (grammatically n., but explicitly male in SB.I.4.4.3 and always male to Vāc, cf. BU. IV.1.6 where 'the woman' is Vāc) and Vāc (always both grammatically and effectively f.): in SB.VIII.1.3.5 the Sāman is the husband (*pati*) of the Rc, which is as much as to say that *ṛcaspati*=*vācaspati*. In the syzygy *vāgmanas*, *prāna* may take the place of *manas*, as in JU.III.359, where *prāna* (*satya*) and *vāc* (*rta*) are referred to as 'He' and 'She' (*sa*, *sā*) and are united (*ekam abhavam*, are married); or it may with the Brahma that Vāc is conscious (BU.II.2.3). It will be seen, accordingly, that grammatical gender is by no means always a final clue to the effective gender of the referents: *sāman*, *manas*, and *brahma* are grammatically neuter, but as persons effectively masculine; while conversely in JUB.I.53.2 'She' has to be rendered by *yad* (n.), *sa* (m.) and *sā* (f.) to agree with *asat*, *apānah*, and *vāc* (*ā+r=ar*). Cf. also the discussion of gender by Keith, *Aitareya Āraṇyaka*, pp. 208–09, note 1.

Comparison may also be made with SB.IV.3.2.3,4 where the Cantor (*udgātr*) is male to the Reciter (*hotṛ*, in the restricted sense) and the recitative is their offspring, AB.II.5 where the vocal priest is by implication feminine to the Maitrāvaraṇa (*Vāsiṣṭha*, *Brahmā*), and AB.VI.3 where naturally male persons (the Subrahmaṇyā and Neṣṭṛ priests) are treated as ritually female in accordance with their symbolic functions, and the question is asked: 'How is it that they consider him who is really male as if he were a female!' (*kasmād enām pumānsam*

santām strim ivācakṣata). The answer to this question in our context would be that it is by their respective functions that the 'sex' of the Sacerdotium and the Regnum is determined. On 'Sex' see also Philo, *De Fuga et Inventione* 51.2.

Every student of Indian ritual will have remarked the constant attribution of opposite sex even to inanimate objects that are made use of: an effect can only be produced by the conjunction of two functionally contrasted causes, respectively formal and material, i.e. masculine and feminine. It is for the same reasons that the initiations, rites, sacrifices, and arts that have to do with the communion of men with Gods are spoken of by Plato as *erotica*. It is, in fact, so in all making by art, where the word 'concept' (formulation, expression) still implies that a 'conjugation' (yoking, or marriage) of intellect (*manas*) with its organ (*vāc*) has taken place. We too still speak, although quite 'superstitiously' (a 'superstition' is a 'survival'), of a 'wedding' of words to music. In Western coronation rites the Bishop places a ring on the King's marriage finger, an action that says as plainly as if in words, 'With this ring I thee wed.' Cf. Philo, *De Fuga*. 150 for the significance of 'Ring'.

Close American Indian parallels can be cited. Thus, 'in Navajo literature and art all things go in pairs, male and female sometimes, but often two of the same sex, one strong, the other weaker. . . one of the Twins is a weak aid to the other. . . Moon is the weaker of the Sun-Moon pair' (Newcomb and Reichard, *Sand-paintings of the Navajo Shooting Chant*, 1937, p. 55 and Matthes, *The Night Chant, Memoirs of the American Museum of Natural History*, Vol. VI.p.6. for example, Nature is masculine and Soul is feminine); and with reference to the necessity of such pairings is 'the confirmed Navajo belief that neither sex is self-sufficient, but both are necessary to fulfilment of any sort. There are many cases where two beings of the same kind [i.e. same ostensible sex] are paired, yet they are both males and [i.e. or both] females. Holy man (Monster Slayer) and Holy Boy (Child of the Waters); Sun and Moon. . . Holy Women and Holy Girl are pairs of this kind. These combinations seem to point to the emphasis that weaker, more gentle powers are as necessary to well-being as the stronger more forceful ones. This explanation is a religious one in the light of the Navajo effort to secure harmony. . . Blue and black are 'males' or better 'dominating' colors in the Shooting Chant, white and yellow are the 'female' or 'submissive colors' (Reichard, *Navajo Medicine Man*, 1939, p. 78).

the entire Principle, Nature, and Shape, Distinctly, and Compleatly in itself, Peter Sterry in Vivian da Sola Pinto, *Peter Sterry, Puritan and Platonist*, 1934, p. 200.

65. *Sa* being masculine, we follow Keith in rendering *ama* and *sa* by 'That' and 'This' (which are often the terms in which Heaven and Earth are referred to). The marriage formula (see above, and note 63) elsewhere has *sā*, 'She', and it may be that, as Keith suggests, *sa* is an error for *sā*: we are inclined, however, to think that the masculine *sa* is the result of an attraction to the actual and obvious sex of the person addressed, for we must not overlook that the marriage formula is here applied to the case of two persons both of whom are empirically male, and that the words are spoken here only 'as if' by a man to a woman. For *sā+tama* see AB III.23 and JUB.1.53.

Sky (*dyaus*) and Harmony or Music (*sāman*) are always masculine to Earth (*prthivī*) and Words (*rc*). In ŠB.IV.6.7.11 for example, 'There in the *sadas* that male, the Sāma, approaches that female, the Rc' (*tād vā etād vṛṣā sāma yósām rcām śadasy ádhyeti*), the reference being to the congress of Manas (grammatically n., but explicitly male in ŠB.I.4.4.3 and always male to Vāc, cf. BU. IV.1.6 where 'the woman' is Vāc) and Vāc (always both grammatically and effectively f.): in ŠB.VIII.1.3.5 the Sāman is the husband (*pati*) of the Rc, which is as much as to say that *rcaspati*=*vācaspati*. In the syzygy *vāgmanas*, *prāna* may take the place of *manas*, as in JU.III.359, where *prāṇa* (*satya*) and *vāc* (*rta*) are referred to as 'He' and 'She' (*sa*, *sā*) and are united (*ekam abhavam*, are married); or it may with the Brahma that Vāc is conscient (BU.II.2.3). It will be seen, accordingly, that grammatical gender is by no means always a final clue to the effective gender of the referents: *sāman*, *manas*, and *brahma* are grammatically neuter, but as persons effectively masculine; while conversely in JUB.I.53.2 'She' has to be rendered by *yad* (n.), *sa* (m.) and *sā*(f.) to agree with *asat*, *apānah*, and *vāc* (*ā+r=ar*). Cf. also the discussion of gender by Keith, *Aitareya Āranyaka*, pp. 208–09, note 1.

Comparison may also be made with ŠB.IV.3.2.3,4 where the Cantor (*udgātr*) is male to the Reciter (*hotr*, in the restricted sense) and the recitative is their offspring, AB.II.5 where the vocal priest is by implication feminine to the Maitrāvaraṇa (*Vāsiṣṭha*, *Brahmā*), and AB.VI.3 where naturally male persons (the Subrahmaṇyā and Neṣṭṛ priests) are treated as ritually female in accordance with their symbolic functions, and the question is asked: 'How is it that they consider him who is really male as if he were a female!' (*kasmād enāṁ pumānsam*

santāṁ strim ivācakṣata). The answer to this question in our context would be that it is by their respective functions that the 'sex' of the Sacerdotium and the Regnum is determined. On 'Sex' see also Philo, *De Fuga et Inventione* 51.2.

Every student of Indian ritual will have remarked the constant attribution of opposite sex even to inanimate objects that are made use of: an effect can only be produced by the conjunction of two functionally contrasted causes, respectively formal and material, i.e. masculine and feminine. It is for the same reasons that the initiations, rites, sacrifices, and arts that have to do with the communion of men with Gods are spoken of by Plato as *erotica*. It is, in fact, so in all making by art, where the word 'concept' (formulation, expression) still implies that a 'conjugation' (yoking, or marriage) of intellect (*manas*) with its organ (*vāc*) has taken place. We too still speak, although quite 'superstitiously' (a 'superstition' is a 'survival'), of a 'wedding' of words to music. In Western coronation rites the Bishop places a ring on the King's marriage finger, an action that says as plainly as if in words, 'With this ring I thee wed.' Cf. Philo, *De Fuga*. 150 for the significance of 'Ring'.

Close American Indian parallels can be cited. Thus, 'in Navajo literature and art all things go in pairs, male and female sometimes, but often two of the same sex, one strong, the other weaker. . . one of the Twins is a weak aid to the other. . . Moon is the weaker of the Sun-Moon pair' (Newcomb and Reichard, *Sand-paintings of the Navajo Shooting Chant*, 1937, p. 55 and Matthes, *The Night Chant, Memoirs of the American Museum of Natural History*, Vol. VI.p.6. for example, Nature is masculine and Soul is feminine); and with reference to the necessity of such pairings is 'the confirmed Navajo belief that neither sex is self-sufficient, but both are necessary to fulfilment of any sort. There are many cases where two beings of the same kind [i.e. same ostensible sex] are paired, yet they are both males and [i.e. or both] females. Holy man (Monster Slayer) and Holy Boy (Child of the Waters); Sun and Moon. . . Holy Women and Holy Girl are pairs of this kind. These combinations seem to point to the emphasis that weaker, more gentle powers are as necessary to well-being as the stronger more forceful ones. This explanation is a religious one in the light of the Navajo effort to secure harmony. . . Blue and black are 'males' or better 'dominating' colors in the Shooting Chant, white and yellow are the 'female' or 'submissive colors' (Reichard, *Navajo Medicine Man*, 1939, p. 78).

66. Here, and in the marriage formula of AV.XIV.2.71, we render *sāman* 'chant', by 'Harmony' (Attunement or Music), because 'all chanting and singing is music' (AA.II.3.6 *sāmātho ya kāś ca gesnāḥ saḥ svarah*, cf. CU.I.6.8 *tasya rk̄ ca sāma ca gesnau*). *Svara* 'note', 'tone', or 'music' is often rendered by 'accent', but what is meant is really 'tone' as in Chinese and early Greek, not 'stress' as in English: stress is, in fact, not a poetical but a prosaic quality. The contrast of *sāman* and *rk̄* is that of a Harmony that transcends Speech, and a verbal articulation on which the Music is supported as if in a vehicle (*vāc* as *rathantara*, PB.VII.6.3.4 and 7.13, 14). The Music is sung on words (*rk̄i sāma gīyate*, SB.VIII.1.3.3) and borne or supported (*adhyūdham*, CU.I.6.1-5, *pratiṣṭhitam* CU.I.8.7) on them as an earth; this relation of the Music to the Words being the same as that of the Sun to the Moon in AV.XV.15.4.5, where the former is *praūdhaḥ* and the latter *abhyūdhaḥ*; in these words *vah* has its marital significance, and it may be noted that *praudhā* can be applied to a woman only when she is a virago, a relatively masculine type. Thus the Harmony wedded to the Words is incarnated as if by a mother (SB.IV.3.2.3), the Rc is *Vāc* and 'the Great Litany (Agni) is her supreme adaptation' (*paramo vikārah*, A.A.II.3.6). It is in the same way that the King brings forth (enacts) what the Priest knows (cf. notes 22, 26), and that the formation of a concept begotten by Manas or Brahma on *Vāc* is a vital operation (BU.II.2.3, IV.1.6, and Kena U.30).

On the other hand, the Words considered apart from and in opposition to the Music (*svara*) are the 'evil (*pāpman*) of the Chant, and whoever seeks to take refuge in such a toneless Rc (*roy asvarāyām*) is found out by Death' (JUB.I.16.10.I.18.8; CU.I.4.3). It is because the words (*rk̄*) are the physical and mortal 'body' of the Music as distinguished from itself, and 'the body is given over to Death to be his share, so that no one becomes immortal with the body', that Prajāpati tells the Gods to approach the world of heavenly light by means of the wordless Chant (*sāmnā 'nr̄cena*) and so indeed they did, 'shaking off these bodies, the verbal tracks (*etāny rk̄padānī śarirāṇi dhūnvanta*) that lay strewn (along their path) up to the Sky' (JUB.I.15.3f. with SB.X.4.3.9); this is the same as the 'ascent on wings of sound' (*svarapakṣa*, JUB.III.13.10) or 'wings of light' (*jyotiṣpakṣa*, PB.X.4.5), or 'metrical wings, (*chāndahpkṣa*', AV.VIII.9.12). Thus the *devayāna* is thought of as the *via negativa* (for the 'ways of excellence and remotion' see MU.IV.6): 'the angles have fewer ideas and use less means than men' (Eckhart); 'Not what is

uttered by *Vāc*, not what men worship here, but that by which *Vāc* is uttered, know only that as Brahma. . . it is the Unknown that should be remembered, methinks' (*mimāṁsyam eva te manye 'viditam*, JUB.IV.18.5 and 19.1).

But while that which can be tracked pertains to our mortality (*padena ha vas punarnṛtyur anveti*), and it is just because the Immortals have left their tracks *behind them* these Gods, Agni, Vāyu, Āditya, Candramas are (like the Buddha) in themselves 'trackless' (*na ha vā etāśāṁ devatānāṁ padam asti*, JUB.III.35.7; *apadāṁ, kena padena nessatha?* Dh. 179), yet can be followed by their traces (*padāni*, scriptural, liturgical, iconographic, and reliquary). There could, indeed, be no other 'ascent after Agni' TS.V.6.8.1) than by following up the road on which the tracks are strewn of those who have gone before, until these footprints end with the road itself, beyond which lies the Unknown *summum bonum* 'from which words recoil' (Tatt. U.II.4). A *via affirmativa* must precede the *via negativa*: 'meanings' and images must not be discarded until they are no longer meanings *to* but meanings *of* ourselves, no longer figures of others but our own, who can then no longer see them over against 'ourselves'. The reader must not confuse the meta-physics of scripture with the 'anti-intellectualism' of the modern mob. That the music of the spheres is 'pure' of any objective sense is by no means a justification of our current love of fine sounds, miscalled 'love of art'; when we say: 'Leave it to pure sound when the meaning's almost nothing', this has nothing to do with the unintelligibility of the solar songs, but only commends the sensitive and aesthetic art of the charmer of snakes.

It must not be gathered from what has been said above that the Chant is a Music incomplete for lack of words. On the contrary, just as Agni is both Mitra and Varuṇa (RV.VII.12.3), 'the great Brahma, one *aksara*, inexpressible Ātman, is both the *brahma* and the *kṣatra*' (SB.X.4.1.9 with SA.XIII), *parāpara* (MU.VI.23), *niruktānirukta*, *śabdāśabda*, etc., and can therefore as *brahma* stand alone, which is no more possible for the *kṣatra* (SB.IV.I.4.2-3) than for a woman (Manu V.148, cf. IX.2), and just as the Spirit (*ātman*) is in itself an androgynous syzygy (BU.I.4.3, cf. Plato, *Symposium*, 189 E) and only by a schism of its two selves becomes a husband and wife, or *brahma* and *kṣatra*, so the quiddity of the Chant or Harmony (*sāmnā sāmatva*) is explained as the biunity of its logically differentiated elements, tone (*svara*) and words (*rk̄*); the congress (*samiti*, *saindhvi*, *mithuna*, etc.) of the masculine and feminine principles, like that of their verbal symbols

(*sā+ama=sāman*), making up the incomposite whole of the Harmony itself (a whole that had never been diminished by the differentiation of the words); it is only the mere words in themselves, and not the words as the support (*pratiṣṭhā*) of the Harmony, that are 'evil'; and in the same way for the relationship of the Sacerdotium and Regnum, or Inner and Outer Man.

It has, of course, been generally overlooked that in KU.II.23 where there is a 'choice' of one self by the other; in BU.IV.4.23 where 'the pacified and dompted (*sāntó dāntáḥ*) and composed (*samāhitāḥ*, 'in *samādhi*') self sees itself only in the Self (*ātmán̄ evātmánam paśyet*, i.e. being in the spirit sees only the Spirit, sees itself not as it is in itself but as it is in God); in BU.IV.2.1 *samāhitātmā* ('self-composed'), AA.III.2.1 *prāne. . . samāhitāḥ*, and AA.III.2.6 *ātmānam samadadhāt* (Keith, 'put himself together'), *samādhi* implies the *ātmamithunah* of CU.VII.25.2, *samdhā* governing *ātmānam* always referring to the *hieros gamos* that is to be consummated within you, in the heart. In the arts, *samdhā* (cf. *harmoxo harmonia*) has the analogous value to 'fuse' or 'weld' or otherwise 'fasten' together two different metals, or such incongruous materials as wood and iron (in the latter case with glue, *śleṣmāṇa*, *vṛśliṣ*, to 'embrace', in the former by means of a 'salt'), and 'even so the Comprehensor heals everything' (*sarvam bhiṣajyati*) by the utterances (*vyāhṛtayah*) *bhūr*, *bhuvas*, *svar* (the reference of which utterances is to the unions of Agni with Earth, Vāyu with Space, and the Sun with the Sky), JUB.III.17.2, 3.

The grammatical *sāndhi* and *sāṁhitā* are, in fact, only a special case in the long series of analogous conjunctions discussed in ŠA.VII and VIII and corresponding passages of AA., and elsewhere. In the case of all these unions the end in view is an effective harmony and the reproduction of the higher of the two principles involved. In general the junction is a combination (*sāṁhitā*) of the parents in their child (ŠA.VII.15, cf. Taitt. U.I.3), so that, for example, 'science' (*vidyā*) is the conjunction of Intellect and Voice, Manas and Vāc, jointly necessary to the expression of any concept of truth (ŠA.VII.7).

Now in the case of the macrocosmic harp (the seven-rayed Sun) and that of the analogous human instrument with its seven 'breaths', AV.XV.15.2, etc.), the man himself (cf. A.III.374 f., where in the 'figure', *nimitta*, of the harp, the right tuning of the strings to a mean that is neither too taut nor too slack corresponds to the proper adjustment of the man's force and faculties, *virīya* and *indriyāṇi*: Plato, Rep. 349E, 412A and Phaedo), the combination (*sāṁhitā*) that is its

'force' (*tvīṣi=bala* in Tatt. U.I.2) is that of the skilled player with the instrument itself, these two being the formal and efficient causes of the audible harmony or euphony; we read that 'Just as the harp struck by a skilled player accomplishes the last end (whole reason, *raison d'être*) of the harp, so the voice impelled by a skilled speaker accomplishes the last end of the voice' (*evam eva kuśalena vaktrā vāg ārabdhā kṛtsnam vāgartham sādhayati*, ŠA.VIII.10. cf. BG.II.50, *yogah karmasu kauśalam*), and it is certainly pertinent to the Kingship that we are told that 'He who is a Comprehensor of this divine harp (the seven-rayed Sun) becomes exceedingly famous: his renown fills the earth; men hearken to him when he speaks in the assemblies, saying: 'Let this be done which he desires' ' (ŠA.VIII.9). The speaker, like the King and other artists, is thought of as a *sādhaka*, 'one to hit the mark.' Here then is a rhetoric of 'the energising of truth, the bringing to bear of truth upon men' (Baldwin, *Mediaeval Rhetoric and Poetic*, p. 3). For it is clear that the 'last end' of the musical speech is by no means one of fine sounds for their own sake (for which the voice alone, uninformed by any meaning would suffice; it has been remarked that 'To exercise freedom of speech one needs only vocal cords'), not what the sense powers (*indriyāṇi*) have to offer, not amusement, but that 'science without which art is nothing', that 'science' (*vidyā*) for which the cooperation of Manas with Vāc, Inner Sage and Outer King, *philosophia* and *dynamis*, is required, that 'meaning of the Vedas' by which, if one understands it, the Summum Bonum (*sakalam bhadram*) is attainable (ŠA.XIV). We need hardly say that this is also precisely Plato's (and the universal) doctrine of the purpose of art: we are endowed by the Gods with vision and hearing, and harmony was given by the Muses to him that can use them intellectually (*meta nou = manasa*), not as an aid to irrational pleasure (*hēdonē alogon*) as is nowadays supposed, but to assist the soul's revolution (*psiches periodon*, cf. *cittavṛtti* and *vrata*), to restore it to order and concord with itself (i.e. the 'Self', the Inner Man of *Phaedrus* 279 C). And because of the want of measure (*ametron*) and the lack of graces in most of us, rhythm (= *numerus*, *sāṁkhyāna*) was also bestowed upon us by the same deities and for the same ends' (*Timaeus* 47 D,E): the composition of sounds is the basis of an affect (*pathē*) that affords, indeed 'pleasure (*hēdonē*) only to the unintelligent, but to the intelligent (*emphron* connected with *phrēn* 'heart', 'mind' and = Skr. *sahṛdaya*) that heart's ease (*euphrosynē*) also which is induced by the mimesis of the divine harmony made manifest in mortal motions' (ib. 80 B, echoed in Quintilian's *docti*

nationem componendi intelligent, etiam indocti voluptatem [The learned in uniting understand reason, the unlearned understand only pleasure] IX, 4, 116, and in St. Augustine's deprecation of those 'who enjoy what they should use'). Plato's conception of the 'whole end of the voice', or more generally of the whole purpose of art (since he regards all craftsmen as 'poets', *Gorgias* 503), is identical with that of the Āranyakas, and it is clear that his 'delight', so carefully distinguished from 'pleasure', is no more 'aesthetic' than is the 'savoring of the flavor (*rāśavāśvādāna*) that the Sātya Darpaṇa (III.2-3) speaks of as 'Intellectually beatific' (*ānandacinmaya*, cf. A.III.354 *paramam nānam... sukhām anuttaram*) and as the 'twin brother' of the 'savoring of Brahma'; *rāsa* corresponding to the 'sap' in *sapientia*, 'cognitio cum amore' 'understanding with love'). In the present context the application is to the art of government, likened to that of music; the end of this art is not the King's pleasure, but his 'children's' and his own good. As in any other vocation (*svadharma*) the King is to be governed by his art, not 'expressing himself', the instrument, but voicing what has been dictated by the Intellect, *nous* (*manasā vā agre kirtayati*, ŠA.VII.2, cf. John VIII.28 and Dante, *Purgatorio*, XXIV. 52.54), and making the good of the work to be done his only concern (*karmany evādhikāras te*, BG.II.47). In the last analysis, God is the skilled player and we the harp of which the 'strings' or 'senses' must be 'regulated'.

We begin to see now why the words (*rc*) should be studied (*adhīyitā*, i.e. like all other symbols, as supports of contemplation, *dhiyālamba*) in their *sāmhitā* form, that form in which they are sung, and in which alone are they 'life-giving' (*āyusya*, ŠA.VIII.11), i.e. Productive of *dirgham āyus* here (the life of 100 years; Immortality' for man = 100 years of life, ŠB.XIII. 1.5.6 and PB.XXIV.19.2) and hereafter (imperishable immortality). It is because the reconstitution (*ātmasaṁskṛti*) of the disintegrated and manifold self effected in the Sacrifice (for which the Chant is absolutely indispensable, TS.II.5.8.4) is essentially metrical: 'the sacrificer perfects himself as composed of the metres' (*chandomayām saṁskurute*, AB.VI.27, Keith's rendering), and is thus a 'perfected Self' (*sukrtātman*, Taitt.U.II.7): Prajāpati, broken up in the emanation of his children (cf. ŠB.X.5.2.16 on the One and the Many) 'unifies himself by means of the metres' (*chandobhir ātmānam samādhat*, AA.III. 2.6 and ŠA.VIII.II), i.e. 'synthesises' the manifold self with the simple Self (the rebel with the rightful sovereign). Similarly, in the *sāmādhi* of the Yogaśāstra where there is a reconciliation and

'synthesis' of hostile selves, and in the *sāmādhi* of the Arthaśāstra where *sāmādhi* or *sāmādhi-karana** is the making of a treaty of peace and alliance (also explained as a *sambhavāna*, a term so often employed in connection with marital alliances) between two powers that have been at war, and the converse *sāmādhi*-or *sāmādhi-mokṣa* (= *sāmādhi-bheda*) is the dissolution or breaking of such a treaty and analogous to the grammatical *sāmādhivivartana*=*padaccheda*, the 'divorce' of fused words; it will be seen that I cannot wholly agree with Edgerton's rendering of *sāmādhi* by 'hostage' (see his 'Samādhi, 'Hostage'...', in JAOS 60.208ff.) but rather hold that the *sāmādhi* (synthesis) is a 'treaty of peace' commonly ratified or secured by an exchange of gifts or 'deposits' (*āhita*), not excluding those of persons such as a daughter given in marriage (rather as a pledge than as a hostage); the pledges or hostages are given when the peace is made, and there is nothing to show that any such hostages were held while the fighting was going on, which hostages could be 'released'. In any case all these 'agreements' are analogous to that of the 'two selves' of Mitrāvaraṇau and all those other aspects of the union of contrary principles, in which there is always an exchange of gifts, each giving something of its own to the other: all these *έρωτικά* (*erotica*) are makings of harmony and order where discord had been, and we can say with Dionysius (*De div. nom.* IV.5) that 'all alliances and friendships are because of the beautiful'; this will apply, for example to the 'alliance' of words in grammatical *sāmādhi*, for the metrical *sāmhitā* texts are assuredly beautiful, the mere words (*rc*) being the 'evil' of the chant, and *kalyāṇa* the opposite of *pāpman* as is *pulcher* of *turpis*.

On the other hand, in *pada* texts the blank space (*avakāśa*) or moment of time (*mātrā*) 'divorces the conjunction' (*sāmādhīm vivartayati*, cf. RV.VI.9.1 *vivartete rājasī* and VII.80.1 *vivartīyantīm rājasī*; and *vivrata*, 'contrasted operation') and divides (*vibhajati*) or distinguishes (*vijnāpayati*) the long and short syllables (*mātrāmātrām*) and tonic (in Webster's sensc 4 b) from 'atonic' (*svarāsvaram*), AA.III.1..5 with ŠA.VII.12. such a formulation is certainly not meant to be understood only grammatically (grammar itself is a traditional 'Way' and 'Doctrine'; cf. CU.II.22.3-5, Tait. U.I.3.1, and Faddegon, *Studies on Pāṇini's Grammar*, 1936, pp. 67, 68); the 'divorce' of the metrically

*Cf. *Susistenaḥpi sāmādhī* 'Even with a very close alliance' enemy is still an enemy. Edgerton, *Pancatantra* II.105, 106, 333.

rationem componendi intelligunt, etiam indocti voluptatem [The learned in uniting understand reason, the unlearned understand only pleasure] DK. 4, 116, and in St. Augustine's deprecation of those 'who enjoy what they should use'). Plato's conception of the 'whole end of the voice', or more generally of the whole purpose of art (since he regards all craftsmen as 'poets', *Gorgias* 513), is identical with that of the Ācāryakāra, and it is clear that his 'delight', so carefully distinguished from 'pleasure', is no more 'aesthetic' than is the 'savoring of the flavor (*rasaśīvādām*) that the Śātya Darpana (III.2-3) speaks of as 'Intellectually beatific' (*ānandacinmaya*, cf. A.III.354 *paramam nānam-sukham anuttaram*) and as the 'twin brother' of the 'savoring of Brahma'; *rasa* corresponding to the 'sap' in *sapientia*, 'cognitio cum amore' 'understanding with love'). In the present context the application is to the art of government, likened to that of music; the end of this art is not the King's pleasure, but his 'children's' and his own good. As in any other vocation (*svadharma*) the King is to be governed by his art, not 'expressing himself', the instrument, but voicing what has been dictated by the Intellect, *nous* (*manasā vā agre kirtayati*, ŠA.VII.2, cf. John VIII.28 and Dante, *Purgatorio*, XXIV. 52.54), and making the good of the work to be done his only concern (*karmāṇy evādhikāras te*, BG.II.47). In the last analysis, God is the skilled player and we the harp of which the 'strings' or 'senses' must be 'regulated'.

We begin to see now why the words (*ṛc*) should be studied (*adhīyītā*, i.e. like all other symbols, as supports of contemplation, *dhiyālamba*) in their *sāmhitā* form, that form in which they are sung, and in which alone are they 'life-giving' (*āyusya*, ŠA.VIII.11), i.e. Productive of *dirgham āyus* here (the life of 100 years; Immortality' for man = 100 years of life, ŠB.XIII. 1.5.6 and PB.XXIV.19.2) and hereafter (imperishable immortality). It is because the reconstitution (*ātmasamskṛti*) of the disintegrated and manifold self effected in the Sacrifice (for which the Chant is absolutely indispensable, TS.II.5.8.4) is essentially metrical: 'the sacrificer perfects himself as composed of the metres' (*chandomayām sāmskūrute*, AB.VI.27, Keith's rendering), and is thus a 'perfected Self' (*sukrtatman*, Taitt.U.II.7): Prajāpati, broken up in the emanation of his children (cf. ŠB.X.5.2.16 on the One and the Many) 'unifies himself by means of the metres' (*chandobhir ātmānam sāmadhat*, AA.III. 2.6 and ŠA.VIII.II), i.e. 'synthesises' the manifold self with the simple Self (the rebel with the rightful sovereign). Similarly, in the *sāmādhi* of the Yogaśāstra where there is a reconciliation and

'synthesis' of hostile, selves, and in the *sāmādhi* of the Arthaśāstra where *sāmādhi* or *sāmādhi-karana** is the making of a treaty of peace and alliance (also explained as a *sambhavana*, a term so often employed in connection with marital alliances) between two powers that have been at war, and the converse *sāmādhi-va sāmādhi-mokṣa* (= *sāmādhi-bhedā*) is the dissolution or breaking of such a treaty and analogous to the grammatical *sāmādhi-vivartana*=*padacheda*, the 'divorce' of fused words; it will be seen that I cannot wholly agree with Edgerton's rendering of *sāmādhi* by 'hostage' (see his 'Samādhi, "Hostage" . . .', in JAOS 60.208ff.) but rather hold that the *sāmādhi* (synthesis) is a 'treaty of peace' commonly ratified or secured by an exchange of gifts or 'deposits' (*āhita*), not excluding those of persons such as a daughter given in marriage (rather as a pledge than as a hostage); the pledges or hostages are given when the peace is made, and there is nothing to show that any such hostages were held while the fighting was going on, which hostages could be 'released'. In any case all these 'agreements' are analogous to that of the 'two selves' of Mitrāvaraṇau and all those other aspects of the union of contrary principles, in which there is always an exchange of gifts, each giving something of its own to the other: all these *έρωτικά* (*erotica*) are makings of harmony and order where discord had been, and we can say with Dionysius (*De div. nom.* IV.5) that 'all alliances and friendships are because of the beautiful'; this will apply, for example to the 'alliance' of words in grammatical *sāmādhi*, for the metrical *sāmādhi* texts are assuredly beautiful, the mere words (*ṛc*) being the 'evil' of the chant, and *kalyāṇa* the opposite of *pāpman* as is *pulcher* of *turpis*.

On the other hand, in *pada* texts the blank space (*avakāśa*) or moment of time (*mātrā*) 'divorces the conjunction' (*sāmādhi-vivartayati*, cf. RV.VI.9.1 *vivartete rājasī* and VII.80.1 *vivartīyantim rājasī*; and *vivrata*, 'contrasted operation') and divides (*vibhajati*) or distinguishes (*vijnāpayati*) the long and short syllables (*mātrāmātrām*) and tonic (in Webster's sense 4 b) from 'atonic' (*svarāsvaram*), AA.III.1.5 with ŠA.VII.12. such a formulation is certainly not meant to be understood only grammatically (grammar itself is a traditional 'Way' and 'Doctrine'; cf. CU.II.22.3-5, Tait. U.I.3.1, and Faddegon, *Studies on Pāṇini's Grammar*, 1936, pp. 67, 68); the 'divorce' of the metrically

*Cf. *Suslistenāpi sāmādhi* 'Even with a very close alliance' enemy is still an enemy. Edgerton, *Pancatantra* II.105, 106, 333.

fused syllables is, as much as the divorce of Sky and Earth, their disaccord and discord: *mātrā* is the quantitative 'matter' that fills space (*mātrā* as *materia* BU.IV.3.9), and *avakāśa* (=ākāśa, *antarikṣa*, Sāyaṇa on PB.XVIII.9.6) the luminous sphere that intervenes between the Earth and Sky; *mātrā* and *amātrā* can be taken to refer to what has measure or number and what has not (the distinction of poetry from prose); while the distinction of *svara* (tone, tune, music, 'the gold of the chant', BU.I.3.25,26) from what is *asvara* (tuneful noise)—in ŚA. I emend to *asvarāt svaram* to agree with AA. *svarāsvaram*—can be equated with that of the intoned (*svarya*) chant from the toneless libretto (*rc*, 'the evil of the chant', JUB.I.16.10) and furthermore with that of solar light from mundane darkness (it can hardly be conveyed in English that *svar* implies both 'tone' and 'light', though we can speak of a 'brilliant tone', and Dante spoke of 'singing suns'). Strong confirmation of these interpretations can be found in a correlation of AA.II.3.6 where we are told that 'vain talk is unmeasured' (*vṛthā vāk tad amitam*)—we understand this to mean at once 'unmetrical' and 'immoderate'—with JB.II.69, 70, 73 where in the sacrificial contest between Prajāpati and Death 'what was sung or danced to the harp by way of mere entertainment' (*vṛthā=mógham*, 'vainly', in the corresponding text of SB.III.2.4.6) by Death is 'unnumbered' (*asamkhyānam*) and 'deadly' (*martyam*), and what by Prajāpati 'numbered' (*samīkhyānam*) and 'lively' (*amṛtam*), and Death's music is now our secular art of the 'parlor' (*patnisālā*), 'whatever people sing to the harp, or dance or do to please themselves' (*vṛthā*): and with SB.III.2.4.1.6 where the mundane Devas (*ihā devāḥ*) contest with the celestial (*divi*) Gandharvas for the possession of Vāc; the Gandharvas say to her: 'We are declaring the Vedas, we know, indeed we know' (*vai vayām vidma*, cf. SB.XI.2.3.7), but the mundane Devas: 'We will amuse thee' (*tvā prāmodayiṣyāmaḥ*); Vāc is seduced by the sensitive Devas, 'and that is why even nowadays women are wedded to folly' (*móghasamhitāḥ*); but finally won by the Gandharvas from them. The word *prāmodayiṣyāmaḥ* is reflected below (16) in the expression *prakāmódyā* 'aesthetic, or appetitive conversation', evidently contrasting with *brahmodyā*, 'godly conversation' or 'Brahmanical colloquy' (see Bloomfield in JAOS 15. 184 and Caland on PB.IV.9.12): the distinction of celestial Gandharvas from the mundane Devas is the same as that of the *brahmagandharvāḥ* from the *devāḥ* in TS.VI.1.6.5,6, that of the *divikṣit* from the *lokakṣit* Devas in CU.II.24.14, and that of the Devas whose spokesman is the Sacrifice from the Asuras—the unregenerate

sense-powers, *prāṇāḥ, indriyāḥ*—in SB.III.2.1.18 where also the contest is for Vāc; the mundane Devas are of those who 'can only approach Vāc in sin' in the sense of RV.X.71.9. The distinction of such an 'unmodulated vain conversation' (*vṛthā vāk... amitam*) from the 'Chant commensurate with the spiritual-Self' (*ātmasammitam... sāma*, CU.II.10.1), 'commensurate with the Imperishable' (*akṣar-asammānas... ātmā*, ŚA.VIII.5, i.e. with the syllable Om, with Brahma, not Keith's 'letters'), is very evident. Sāyaṇa's explanation of *vṛthā vāk* in AA.II.3.6 is 'non-Brahmanical interpretations (i.e. 'free examination'; *agata* is very literally 'unauthorised', 'not fathered by') and humorous anecdotes and so forth told at court or other such like places' (*brāhmaṇagatā ye'rthavādā yā ca rājasabhādau parihāśādinīpenocyste*).

The sacred 'science of the celestial Gandharvas' (who know better than the Rishis what is too much or too little in the Sacrifice, SB.XI 2.3.7) and 'science' (*vidyā*) of ŚA. VII.15, must not be equated with our profane science, but with 'metaphysics' (cf. René Guénon, 'Deux sciences' in *La crise du monde moderne*, 1927, and *La métaphysique orientale*, 1939; Gaigneron, *La connaissance interdite*, 1935). An accumulation of knowledge for its own sake, to satisfy a curiosity, is as much as gossip, vaudeville, or any merely sentimental art or 'art for art's sake', a 'profanity' (*vṛthā vāk*: We say 'profanity' here with reference to the opposition of profane to sacred (*íepos, ieros, brahma*), brahma), and the fact that *vṛthā*, from *Vṛ*, to 'choose', is the semiotic equivalent of 'heretical', from *aireo* (*aireomai*) to 'choose for oneself'; the man who can boast, or even admit that 'I do not know what is right, I know what I like to do; I do not know what is true, but what I like to think; and I do not know anything about art, but know what I like' is in the strictest sense of the word a 'heretic', one who however 'well-intentioned' is nevertheless 'opinionated' and 'unprincipled'.

Stated in other words, there is a distinction of a significant (*padārthābhinaya*) and liberating (*vimuktida*) art—the art of those who singing here to the harp are celebrating Him, the Golden Person, in both his natures, immanent and transcendent—from an in-significant art 'colored by worldly passion' (*lokānurañjaka*) and 'dependent on the moods' (*bhāvāśraya*); the former is the 'highway' (*mārga*) and the latter a 'pagan' (*desī*) art (CU.I.7.6–9 with *Samgītadarpaṇa*, I.4–6 and *Daśānūpa*, I.12.14). The distinction of *mārga* from *desī* is not, of course, one of fine from applied or of high from folk art, but of the

fused syllables is, as much as the divorce of Sky and Earth, their disaccord and discord: *mātrā* is the quantitative 'matter' that fills space (*mātrā* as *materia* BU.IV.3.9), and *avakāśa* (=ākāśa, *antarikṣa*, Sāyaṇa on PB.XVIII.9.6) the luminous sphere that intervenes between the Earth and Sky; *mātrā* and *amātrā* can be taken to refer to what has measure or number and what has not (the distinction of poetry from prose); while the distinction of *svara* (tone, tune, music, 'the gold of the chant', BU.I.3.25,26) from what is *asvara* (tuneful noise)—in ŚA. I emend to *asvarāt svaram* to agree with AA. *svarāsvaram*—can be equated with that of the intoned (*svarya*) chant from the toneless libretto (*rc*, 'the evil of the chant', JUB.I.16.10) and furthermore with that of solar light from mundane darkness (it can hardly be conveyed in English that *svar* implies both 'tone' and 'light', though we can speak of a 'brilliant tone', and Dante spoke of 'singing suns'). Strong confirmation of these interpretations can be found in a correlation of AA.II.3.6 where we are told that 'vain talk is unmeasured' (*vṛthā vāk tad amitam*)—we understand this to mean at once 'unmetrical' and 'immoderate'—with JB.II.69, 70, 73 where in the sacrificial contest between Prajāpati and Death 'what was sung or danced to the harp by way of mere entertainment' (*vṛthā=mógham*, 'vainly', in the corresponding text of ŚB.III.2.4.6) by Death is 'unnumbered' (*asamkhyānam*) and 'deadly' (*martyam*), and what by Prajāpati 'numbered' (*samkhyānam*) and 'lively' (*amṛtam*), and Death's music is now our secular art of the 'parlor' (*patniśālā*), 'whatever people sing to the harp, or dance or do to please themselves' (*vṛthā*): and with ŚB.III.2.4.1.6 where the mundane Devas (*ihā devāḥ*) contest with the celestial (*divi*) Gandharvas for the possession of Vāc; the Gandharvas say to her: 'We are declaring the Vedas, we know, indeed we know' (*vai vayām vidma*, cf. ŚB.XI.2.3.7), but the mundane Devas: 'We will amuse thee' (*tvā prāmodayiṣyāmaḥ*); Vāc is seduced by the sensitive Devas, 'and that is why even nowadays women are wedded to folly' (*móghasamhitāḥ*); but finally won by the Gandharvas from them. The word *prāmodayiṣyāmaḥ* is reflected below (16) in the expression *prakāmódyā* 'aesthetic, or appetitive conversation', evidently contrasting with *brahmodyā*, 'godly conversation' or 'Brahmanical colloquy' (see Bloomfield in JAOS 15. 184 and Caland on PB.IV.9.12): the distinction of celestial Gandharvas from the mundane Devas is the same as that of the *brāhmaṇḍharvāḥ* from the *devāḥ* in TS.VI.1.6.5,6, that of the *divikṣit* from the *lokakṣit* Devas in CU.II.24.14, and that of the Devas whose spokesman is the Sacrifice from the Asuras—the unregenerate

sense-powers, *prāṇāḥ*, *indriyāṇī*—in ŚB.III.2.1.18 where also the contest is for Vāc; the mundane Devas are of those who 'can only approach Vāc in sin' in the sense of RV.X.71.9. The distinction of such an 'unmodulated vain conversation' (*vṛthā vāk . . . amitam*) from the 'Chant commensurate with the spiritual-Self' (*ātmasammitam . . . sāma*, CU.II.10.1), 'commensurate with the Imperishable' (*akṣar-asammānas . . . ātmā*, ŚA.VIII.5, i.e. with the syllable Om, with Brahma, not Keith's 'letters'), is very evident. Sāyaṇa's explanation of *vṛthā vāk* in AA.II.3.6 is 'non-Brahmanical interpretations (i.e. 'free examination'; *agata* is very literally 'unauthorised', 'not fathered by') and humorous anecdotes and so forth told at court or other such like places' (*brāhmaṇagatā ye'rthavādā yā ca rājasabhādau parihāśādinūpenocyatē*).

The sacred 'science of the celestial Gandharvas' (who know better than the Rishis what is too much or too little in the Sacrifice, ŚB.XI 2.3.7) and 'science' (*vidyā*) of ŚA. VII.15, must not be equated with our profane science, but with 'metaphysics' (cf. René Guénon, 'Deux sciences' in *La crise du monde moderne*, 1927, and *La métaphysique orientale*, 1939; Gaigneron, *La connaissance interdite*, 1935). An accumulation of knowledge for its own sake, to satisfy a curiosity, is as much as gossip, vaudeville, or any merely sentimental art or 'art for art's sake', a 'profanity' (*vṛthā vāk*: We say 'profanity' here with reference to the opposition of profane to sacred (*ἱέρος*, *ieros*, *brahma*, *brahma*), and the fact that *vṛthā*, from √*vṛ*, to 'choose', is the semiotic equivalent of 'heretical', from *aireo* (*aireomai*) to 'choose for oneself'; the man who can boast, or even admit that 'I do not know what is right, I know what I like to do; I do not know what is true, but what I like to think; and I do not know anything about art, but know what I like' is in the strictest sense of the word a 'heretic', one who however 'well-intentioned' is nevertheless 'opinionated' and 'unprincipled'.

Stated in other words, there is a distinction of a significant (*padārthābhinaya*) and liberating (*vimuktida*) art—the art of those who singing here to the harp are celebrating Him, the Golden Person, in both his natures, immanent and transcendent—from an in-significant art 'colored by worldly passion' (*lokānurañjaka*) and 'dependent on the moods' (*bhāvāśraya*); the former is the 'highway' (*mārga*) and the latter a 'pagan' (*desī*) art (CU.I.7.6–9 with *Saṅgitadarpana*, I.4–6 and *Daśanīpa*, I.12.14). The distinction of *mārga* from *desī* is not, of course, one of fine from applied or of high from folk art, but of the

traditional art that follows up the main track to its destination at 'World's End' from a naturalistic art that wanders off the main road 'in all directions' (cf. *yathā dīśam=yathāvāśam*); the root meanings present in *dēśī* are to 'display', and 'all directions' (*dīśi dīśī*, cf. *dīśo dīśas*, 'hither and thither'). whence *dēśā* 'country' or 'environment', 'outlandish parts' as distinguished from the 'heart' of the kingdom, while *pāgus* is also 'country' and 'pagan', 'outlandish', and thus heterodox. The 'pagan' art by which we are seduced, i.e. led off or led away from the relatively 'narrow' Way is essentially feminine: cf. ŚB.III.2.I.22 where the Devas (Gandharvas) remark that 'Vāc is a woman' (*yōṣā*), and are fearful 'lest she ensnare' (*nā yuvitā*; cf. RV.I.105.2 where Trita laments *ājāyā yuvate pātīm*) the Sacrifice, her suitor on their behalf. This fear is, of course, the basis of the Indian, Islamic, and Christian 'puritanism', which must not be misinterpreted to the discredit of all art and is a disparagement only of the profane arts of amusement, of mere diversion, Plato's 'art of flattery'. There is obviously no disparagement of the Cantor who sings of the Sun on his harp by means of the 'Threefold Science' (*trayī vidyā*, i.e. '*bhūr bhuvas svar*', JUB.I.58.1,2; II.9.7; III.18.4), the harpists whose song is 'of Him', the Person in the Sun, the lord of these worlds thereunder and of men's desires, and so singing win both worlds (CU.I.7.6,I.11), or of the art (*śilpa*) of dancing, singing, and instrumental music referred to in KB.XXIX.5; no disparagement of scripture with its 'figures of thought', but only of 'literature' with its 'figures of speech'; none of 'poetry', but only an affirmation of its real values (*artha*), a justification of such 'scientific' poets as Dante who, with his *dottrina che s'asconde sotto il velame degli versi strani*... doctrine which conceals itself beneath the veil of strange verses; *Inferno* IX.62-63 and confessed amanuensis of Eros, was no more than any Vedic Rishi or *mantrakṛt* a litterateur, but a soothsayer, *satyavādin*.

And just as there is no disparagement of art as such, so in the so-called misogyny of the texts there is no more disparagement of woman as such than there is of things as such; the disparagement is of an effeminacy to which both are liable by a perversion of their naturally and therefore properly 'erotic' nature: a disparagement of monarchy, like that of the spiritual power, is an altogether modern development, essentially proletarian and 'materialistic'. It is not 'this woman', but the feminine, or rather effeminate, principle which, *when it follows its own devices*, makes pleasure its end, is rejected, whether in woman or man, subject or king. We are all of us, like Aditi-Vāc, 'double-headed' (*ubhayataḥśīrṣī*), having one tongue 'worshipful and

regal' (*kṣatriyā hy eṣā yajniyā*) that enunciates the Guerdon (*dāksinā*) of the Sacrifice, the wisdom (*vidyā*) by which the whole end of Speech, and immortality, are won; and another that perverts the Truth (ŚB.III.2.4.16 with JUB.IV.19.4); the latter is condemned, but not the tongue as such.

We realize now that art can have, not only 'fixed ends', but also 'ascertained means of operation'; that it is not only for those who sing here to sing of Him, but to sing as He sings. On the one hand, a prosaic, historical and anecdotal, sentimental and humanistic interpretation of 'scripture as literature', or of any traditional symbol, whether auditory or visual, is a deadly error (cf. S.I.11), the defect of Plutarch's Greeks, who could not distinguish between Apollo and Helios, and because of which many learned Indians have thought of European scholarship as a crime'. On the other it is clear that our substitution of stress for tone, our 'expressive' and informal manner of reading and singing—so different from the measured 'singsong' of traditionally spoken verse—are essentially profane developments characteristic of an age that can no longer think of song as an evocative or creative (*poiētikos*) art in any literal sense of the words, or of the Sacrifice as necessary for our daily bread. We realize the significance of the fact that prose has been a late development in literary history; ours is a prose style, while the traditional lore of all peoples—even the substance of their practical sciences—has been everywhere poetical. The prosaic and pedestrian language of the 'pada text' is the analytical language of fact, the intoned poetry or 'incantation' the language of truth: intonation is analogous to information. It can hardly be said of *us* that our music is 'an earthly representation of the music that there is in the rhythm of the ideal world' or that our 'crafts such as building and carpentry take their principles from that realm and from the thinking there' (Plotinus, *Enneads*, V.9.11), or that we 'make all things according to the pattern that was shown thee upon the mount' (Exodus, XXV.40), or that 'our songs are the same as His songs' (CU.I.7.5); for like all other animals, we know what we like; and over and above this, have invented a science of likes and dislikes—properly styled a 'psychology'—and have substituted this 'aesthetic' for the traditional conception of art as an 'intellectual virtue'. Thus when we said that *samdhī*, whether grammatical, erotic, or technical, was 'for the sake of harmony, or euphony', this did not mean 'for aesthetic reasons', for the love of fine sounds or the mere satisfaction of longings (the traditional union has other and practical ends in view, so that a man sins if he desires even

traditional art that follows up the main track to its destination at 'World's End' from a naturalistic art that wanders off the main road 'in all directions' (cf. *yathā diśam*=*yathāvaśam*); the root meanings present in *deśī* are to 'display', and 'all directions' (*disi diśī*, cf. *diśo diśas*, 'hither and thither'). whence *deśa* 'country' or 'environment', 'outlandish parts' as distinguished from the 'heart' of the kingdom, while *pāgus* is also 'country' and 'pagan', 'outlandish', and thus heterodox. The 'pagan' art by which we are seduced, i.e. led *off* or led *away* from the relatively 'narrow' Way is essentially feminine: cf. ŚB.III.2.I.22 where the Devas (Gandharvas) remark that 'Vāc is a woman' (*yōṣā*), and are fearful 'lest she ensnare' (*nā yuvitā*; cf. RV.I.105.2 where Trita laments *ājāyā yuvate pátim*) the Sacrifice, her suitor on their behalf. This fear is, of course, the basis of the Indian, Islamic, and Christian 'puritanism', which must not be misinterpreted to the discredit of all art and is a disparagement only of the profane arts of amusement, of mere diversion, Plato's 'art of flattery'. There is obviously no disparagement of the Cantor who sings of the Sun on his harp by means of the 'Threefold Science' (*trayī vidyā*, i.e. '*bhūr bhuvas svar*', JUB.I.58.1,2; II.9.7; III.18.4), the harpists whose song is 'of Him', the Person in the Sun, the lord of these worlds thereunder and of men's desires, and so singing win both worlds (CU.I.7.6,I.11), or of the art (*śilpa*) of dancing, singing, and instrumental music referred to in KB.XXIX.5; no disparagement of scripture with its 'figures of thought', but only of 'literature' with its 'figures of speech'; none of 'poetry', but only an affirmation of its real values (*artha*), a justification of such 'scientific' poets as Dante who, with his *dottrina che s'asconde sotto il velame degli versi strani*. . . doctrine which conceals itself beneath the veil of strange verses; *Inferno* IX.62-63 and confessed amanuensis of Eros, was no more than any Vedic Rishi or *mantrikṛt* a litterateur, but a soothsayer, *satyavādin*.

And just as there is no disparagement of art as such, so in the so-called misogyny of the texts there is no more disparagement of woman as such than there is of things as such; the disparagement is of an effeminacy to which both are liable by a perversion of their naturally and therefore properly 'erotic' nature: a disparagement of monarchy, like that of the spiritual power, is an altogether modern development, essentially proletarian and 'materialistic'. It is not 'this woman', but the feminine, or rather effeminate, principle which, *when it follows its own devices*, makes pleasure its end, is rejected, whether in woman or man, subject or king. We are all of us, like Aditi-Vāc, 'double-headed' (*ubhayataḥśīrṣī*), having one tongue 'worshipful and

regal' (*kṣatriyā hy eṣā yajniyā*) that enunciates the Guerdon (*dāksinā*) of the Sacrifice, the wisdom (*vidyā*) by which the whole end of Speech, and immortality, are won; and another that perverts the Truth (ŚB.III.2.4.16 with JUB.IV.19.4); the latter is condemned, but not the tongue as such.

We realize now that art can have, not only 'fixed ends', but also 'ascertained means of operation'; that it is not only for those who sing here to sing of Him, but to sing as He sings. On the one hand, a prosaic, historical and anecdotal, sentimental and humanistic interpretation of 'scripture as literature', or of any traditional symbol, whether auditory or visual, is a deadly error (cf. S.I.11), the defect of Plutarch's Greeks, who could not distinguish between Apollo and Helios, and because of which many learned Indians have thought of European scholarship as a crime'. On the other it is clear that our substitution of stress for tone, our 'expressive' and informal manner of reading and singing—so different from the measured 'singsong' of traditionally spoken verse—are essentially profane developments characteristic of an age that can no longer think of song as an evocative or creative (*poiētikos*) art in any literal sense of the words, or of the Sacrifice as necessary for our daily bread. We realize the significance of the fact that prose has been a late development in literary history; ours is a prose style, while the traditional lore of all peoples—even the substance of their practical sciences—has been everywhere poetical. The prosaic and pedestrian language of the 'pada text' is the analytical language of fact, the intoned poetry or 'incantation' the language of truth: intonation is analogous to information. It can hardly be said of *us* that our music is 'an earthly representation of the music that there is in the rhythm of the ideal world' or that our 'crafts such as building and carpentry take their principles from that realm and from the thinking there' (Plotinus, *Enneads*, V.9.11), or that we 'make all things according to the pattern that was shown thee upon the mount' (Exodus, XXV.40), or that 'our songs are the same as His songs' (CU.I.7.5); for like all other animals, we know what we like; and over and above this, have invented a science of likes and dislikes—properly styled a 'psychology'—and have substituted this 'aesthetic' for the traditional conception of art as an 'intellectual virtue'. Thus when we said that *sāṁdhī*, whether grammatical, erotic, or technical, was 'for the sake of harmony, or euphony', this did not mean 'for aesthetic reasons', for the love of fine sounds or the mere satisfaction of longings (the traditional union has other and practical ends in view, so that a man sins if he desires even

his own wife 'as a woman, and not because she is his wife', and it is not upon a 'falling in love' but on qualifications that the marriage of king and priest depends). The point is that discord is sterile, preventing 'good use', concord effective. If the texts are to be made 'enchanting' (cf. Plato, *Laws* 659 E), this is not in the modern sense of the word but in that sense in which the Cantor (the *Udgātrī*, assimilated to the Sun, see *JAOS* 60, 1940, p. 49, note 12; the harpist whose songs are a mimesis of the solar music of the spheres, CU.I.7.5) is strictly speaking an Enchanter, voicing words of power, a chanticleer announcing the morning. If the intoned (*svarya*) text is actually also more 'charming' than the prosaic reading (this time 'charming' in the modern sense), this charm was not their first intention or last end; the aesthetic value of the incantation, so artfully constructed, is indeed an undeniable value, not however the value of a *raison d'être*, but that of 'the pleasure that perfects the operation'. A good example of the principle can be cited in the case of the lotus wreath, called a 'work of art' or rather 'symbol' (*śilpa*), that Prajāpati wears 'for supremacy' and which he bequeathes to Indra, who thereupon becomes an all-conqueror (PB.XVI.4.3-5); this wreath is assuredly an 'ornament' in the word's original sense of 'equipment'; it is not worn 'for effect' but to be effective. Conversely, those whose language is arid (*anireṇa*, in-sapient) are thought of as unarmed (RV.IV.5.14). Cf. my 'Ornament' in *Art Bulletin*, XXI. 1939.

We find it strange that, with the exception of Gonda, students of Indian rhetoric have completely neglected the older and also the Buddhist material on the 'purpose of speech.'

67. For *purāṇī* Sāyaṇa has *grāmāḥ*, 'villages', but this does not mean, as Keith suggests in a footnote, 'villages in the kingdom'; on the contrary the 'villages' are those of Sky and Earth, as in CU.VIII.6.2 where the Two Worlds are *grāmau*, 'two villages', cf. SB.X.2.5.1 where 'These worlds, indeed are strongholds' (*purāḥ*). For 'worlds as citadels', see AB.I.23. In JUB.I.53.3 the Two Worlds are *āyatanāni*; and in AB.IV.27. the Purohita the King's *āyatana*. In TS.III.4.7.3 the Two Worlds are *upari gr̥ha iha ca*, 'the upper house and this one here below', the latter being the *adharād gr̥ha* of AV.II.14.3. In TS.IV.2.5.1 the formula for the marriage of the two Agnis (*brahma* and *kṣatra*, ib.V.2.4.1) concludes with the words *bhavatāṁ nah samanasau**

*It is by a curious coincidence that this word *sa-manasau*, if analysed as *sam-anasau* would mean 'sharing one vehicle', cf. *sam-vah* to 'drive off together', with a view to 'living together' (*sam-vas*).

samokasau, which are found also in TS.I.3.7 where they are addressed to the firesticks, identified with Urvaśī and Purūravas as parents of Āyu-Agni: *samokasau*, cf. Gk. *synoikeō*, being literally 'cohabitant'. This reflects RV.X.65.8 *Parikṣitā pitārā pūrva jāvarī ṛtasya yonā kṣayataḥ samōkasā dyāvāpr̥thivī varuṇāya savrate. . .* 'Sky and Earth cohabiting, cooperating, at the source of justice', i.e., at the sacrificial altar.

In JB.I.145, where again it is a question of the 'divine marriage' of the Two Worlds (cf. PB.VII.10.3 and AB.IV.27), the result is that now 'they dwell in one another's house (*anyo'nyasya gr̥he*) and it is as hard to see why Caland *Das Jaiminiya Brāhmaṇa* in *Auswahl*, p. 47) found the plural, *vasanti*, so strange as it is to see why Keith (who fails to remark the marital force of TS.I.3.7 and TS.IV.2.5.1) should have thought that Sāyaṇa had overlooked the marital force of the formula in AB.VIII.27. What of the plural in 'They twain shall be one flesh' (*Matthew XIX.5*) and Vidyāpati's 'Each is both'?

There is a very significant parallel here between the Sanskrit and the Greek sources. In the first place the two words *pur* (or *pura*) 'city', and *samokasa* ($\checkmark uc$, to 'be apt for') 'living in one house with' are the etymological equivalents of Greek *polis* and *synoikeō*. Both the Sanskrit and the Greek sources speak of man as a 'city': for example, man's body is a 'city indwelt by God' (*brahmapura*, CU.VIII.1.1, Mund. Up.II.2.7.—the term also meaning 'city of God', i.e. Heaven), the head is the body's *acropolis* (*Timaeus* 70A). Furthermore, just as Sky and Earth are to be 'cohabitant' (*samokasā*) 'here', so the divine, daimonic, immortal part of the soul is said to 'live in one house with' (*synoikeō*, *Timaeus* 90 A, C, etc.) the mortal part of the soul: and if Plato does not expressly interpret this to mean a cohabitation of male and female principles, such a distinction is certainly latent in the fact that the two principles are for him by nature respectively the dominant and the obedient.

We can still speak of a marriage as an 'alliance of two houses', and of the married pair as 'cohabiting'. There can be no possible doubt that the *purāṇī*, 'cities', Sāyaṇa's *grāmāḥ*, in our context are Sky and Earth, the city of God and the city of man.

68. The two 'forms' or 'bodies' (*tanū*) of the Purohita and the King correspond to the 'two forms' (*vām. . . tanūnām*) of Mitrāvaraṇau in RV.V.67.5, and to their 'two selves' or 'two persons' in SB.IV.I.4.I. In PB.VII.10.3 it is by means of their 'two dear bodies' (*priye tanvau*), the *naudhasa* and *śyaita* metres, that the divine marriage (*daivam* the *naudhasa* and *śyaita* metres, that the divine marriage (*daivam* the *mithunam*) of Sky and Earth (*br̥hadhr̥athamtarau*) is consummated, the

union being effected by an exchange of verse endings. For this kind of 'transposition of forms' in marriage, comparable with the *līlāhāva* of the later rhetoricians, cf. PB.VII.10.3 *viparikrāmati* = JB.I.145 *vyavahetām*. In AB.VIII.27 a reading of *sāmīvihāvahai* (for *sāmīvahāvahai*) would scarcely affect the meaning: cf. Caland on *vivahāvahai* in JB.I.145 (JB. in *Auswahl*, pp. 46, 47). The transposition and mingling of hymns in the ritual (e.g. AB.VI.28 *sūkte paryasyati, sa eva tayor vihārah*) is always a comingling of contrasted forms with a view to a propagation; and there is something in the assimilation of the King and Priest to one another that is quite analogous to this.

That *tanūs* in our text refers to the King's person and *tanvam* to the Purohita's is paralleled in TS.VI.I.1.3 (also RV.VIII.48.9 *nas tanvah soma gopāḥ*, and X.7.7 to Agni—*nastanvo' prayucchan*)—'Thou art the body of (King) Soma, protect thou my body'. Cf. SB.XIV.3.1.9 'We will follow Thee (Sūrya) for the protection of the Kṣatra. . . guard thou the Brahmanā's body!' Just as Indra, King *in divinis*, is *vratapā*, 'Fidei Defensor', and becomes the Buddha's protector from the time of the Buddha's Awakening and Enthronement onwards, so the human King is *brāhmaṇānām goptā*. . . *dharmaśya goptā*, AB.VIII.17. For an exchange of bodies and names, and transvestment, Cf. TS.I.3.4.3 and I.5.10.1.

69. Taken alone, this seems to mean 'Formula for the King's choice of the Purohita', cf. RV.V.50.1 'Let every mortal choose (*vurīta*) the God's, the Leader's (i.e. Savitṛ's) fellowship', X.21.1 *agnīm. . . hōtāram tvā vṝmūmahe*, and III.62.10 *vāreṇyam* 'choiceworthy', qualifying Savitṛ's Splendor. In any case the choice is mutual (cf. SB.IV.1.4.5,6); each 'takes' the other in the sense that 'take' is used in the Christian marriage service. In RV.X.124.4 where Agni 'chooses' (*vṝmānah*) Indra it is, of course, to be understood that Indra also 'chooses' Agni, as in TS.II.5.2.3. This reciprocal relationship is paralleled in the ambiguity of the much discussed text of KU.II.23, of which the real theme is that of the sacred marriage to be effected within you (cf. BU.IV.3. 21). In KU.II.23 It is a matter of the 'taking' (*Vlabh*, which has also an erotic sense) of the Self by the self, but it is uncertain which 'self' is the subject of 'chooses' (*vṝmūte*, *Vvṛ*, meaning also to 'woo') in the third line. We assume, with most of the translators, that *eṣa* refers back to *ayam ātmā* (the Self) as subject. However this may be, the problem whether or not *eṣa vṝmūte* implies a 'doctrine of Divine Grace and . . . personal God' (Rawson) does not depend on the grammar here. If we regard the choice or wooing of the lower principle by the higher as

an 'act of grace', then it goes without saying that a doctrine of 'Grace' and a sense of personal relationship with the divine Eros had been taught and felt long before the time of KU. Nor is there any opposition between the doctrines of a personal and an impersonal deity: 'personal and impersonal' (*pauruṣyāpauruṣya*)—like *śabdāśabda*, *kālākāla*, *parimitāparimita*, etc.—is only one of the many ways of describing the divine *dvaitibhāva*.

In this connection it must not be overlooked that a doctrine of Grace implies also one of Disgrace: 'He causes him whom he wishes to lead up from these worlds to perform right acts, and whom he wishes to lead downwards to perform unright acts' (Kaus.U.III.8. cf. Heraclitus, Fr. XLIV). If this appears to deny our moral responsibility (the *akiriyavāda* heresy, attributed also to the Amaurians, see HJAS.IV. 119f., and cf. St. Augustine, *De spir. et lit.* 60), the answer is that the freedom of choice is ours to ask what boon we will (*varam vṝmita yam kāmām kāmayeta tam*) and that whoever prays sincerely in the words of the 'Elevation' (*abhyāroha*), 'Lead me from what is naughty to what is aughty (*asato mā sad gamaya*), from darkness to light, from death to immortality' assuredly obtains his desire (BU.I.3.28). In other words, the Lord bestows his Grace on those who 'choose' his leading, and 'disgraces' those who do not seek it. In the same way the King may or may not 'choose' the guidance of a qualified Purohita: in our text it is clear that the choice has been made, and the spoken words are those of the Purohita expressing his acceptance of the King whom he will 'cause to perform right acts', and therefore to prosper.

70. In *Heres* 258, Philo calls Sarah the *ek physeōs archousan aretēn* and in *Abr.* 99 Philo takes *arete* masculine to *logismos* feminine.

71. Cf. TS.I.6.7.4 'The sacrificer is a bolt (*vajra*), the enemy (*bhrātrvym*) of man is want (*kṣudram*); in that he fasts and does not eat, he straightway smites with a bolt, the enemy, want'; similarly II.5.6.6.

72. In an analysis of the ruling passions of the various human kinds or castes in A.III.363 it is interesting to compare those attributed to the Kṣatriya with those attributed to women: both lists of qualities end in the same way, 'his vocation is to rule' (*issariya pariyoṣāna*, over which Sirī presides, *Jātaka* nos.382), and 'her vocation is to rule'. The word *pariyoṣāna* (Skr. *pari-ava-syu*) almost literally 'tie-up' or 'connection', means vocation, function, entelechy, goal, as may be seen from the fact that in the same context the Samanā's *Pariyoṣāna* is *nibbāna*, and the Householder's (whose 'support is an art') is 'perfected work'. It is not meant that it is the Kṣatriya's and woman's mere *ambition* to rule, but

union being effected by an exchange of verse endings. For this kind of 'transposition of forms' in marriage, comparable with the *līlāhāva* of the later rhetoricians, cf. PB.VII.10.3 *viparikrāmati* = JB.I.145 *vyavahetām*. In AB.VIII.27 a reading of *samvihāvahai* (for *sarivahāvahai*) would scarcely affect the meaning: cf. Caland on *vivahāvahai* in JB.I.145 (JB. in Auswahl, pp. 46, 47). The transposition and mingling of hymns in the ritual (e.g. AB.VI.28 *sūkte paryasyati, sa eva taylor vihārah*) is always a comingling of contrasted forms with a view to a propagation; and there is something in the assimilation of the King and Priest to one another that is quite analogous to this.

That *tanūs* in our text refers to the King's person and *tanvam* to the Purohita's is paralleled in TS.VI.I.1.3 (also RV.VIII.48.9 *nas tanvah̄ soma gopāḥ*, and X.7.7 to Agni—*nastanvo' prayucchan*)—'Thou art the body of (King) Soma, protect thou my body'. Cf. SB.XIV.3.1.9 'We will follow Thee (Sūrya) for the protection of the Kṣatra. . . guard thou the Brahmana's body!' Just as Indra, King *in divinis*, is *vratapā*, 'Fidei Defensor', and becomes the Buddha's protector from the time of the Buddha's Awakening and Enthronement onwards, so the human King is *brāhmaṇānām goptā*. . . *dharmaśya goptā*, AB.VIII.17. For an exchange of bodies and names, and transvestment, Cf. TS.I.3.4.3 and I.5.10.1.

69. Taken alone, this seems to mean 'Formula for the King's choice of the Purohita', cf. RV.V.50.1 'Let every mortal choose (*vurīta*) the God's, the Leader's (i.e. Savitṛ's) fellowship', X.21.1 *agnīm. . . hōtārām tvā vṝmīmahe*, and III.62.10 *vāreṇyam* 'choiceworthy', qualifying Savitṛ's Splendor. In any case the choice is mutual (cf. SB.IV.1.4.5,6); each 'takes' the other in the sense that 'take' is used in the Christian marriage service. In RV.X.124.4 where Agni 'chooses' (*vṝmānah*) Indra it is, of course, to be understood that Indra also 'chooses' Agni, as in TS.II.5.2.3. This reciprocal relationship is paralleled in the ambiguity of the much discussed text of KU.II.23, of which the real theme is that of the sacred marriage to be effected within you (cf. BU.IV.3. 21). In KU.II.23 It is a matter of the 'taking' (Vlabh, which has also an erotic sense) of the Self by the self, but it is uncertain which 'self' is the subject of 'chooses' (*vṝmīte*, √*vṝ*, meaning also to 'woo') in the third line. We assume, with most of the translators, that *eṣa* refers back to *ayam ātmā* (the Self) as subject. However this may be, the problem whether or not *eṣa vṝmīte* implies a 'doctrine of Divine Grace and . . . personal God' (Rawson) does not depend on the grammar here. If we regard the choice or wooing of the lower principle by the higher as

an 'act of grace', then it goes without saying that a doctrine of 'Grace' and a sense of personal relationship with the divine Eros had been taught and felt long before the time of KU. Nor is there any opposition between the doctrines of a personal and an impersonal deity: 'personal and impersonal' (*paunīṣyāpaunīṣya*)—like *śabdāśabda*, *kālākāla*, *parimitāparimita*, etc.—is only one of the many ways of describing the divine *dvaitibhāva*.

In this connection it must not be overlooked that a doctrine of Grace implies also one of Disgrace: 'He causes him whom he wishes to lead up from these worlds to perform right acts, and whom he wishes to lead downwards to perform unright acts' (Kaus.U.III.8. cf. Heraclitus, Fr. XLIV). If this appears to deny our moral responsibility (the *akiriyavāda* heresy, attributed also to the Amaurians, see HJAS.IV. 119f., and cf. St. Augustine, *De spir. et lit.* 60), the answer is that the freedom of choice is ours to ask what boon we will (*varam vṝmita yam kāmām kāmayeta tam*) and that whoever prays sincerely in the words of the 'Elevation' (*abhyāroha*), 'Lead me from what is naughty to what is aughty (*asato mā sad gamaya*), from darkness to light, from death to immortality' assuredly obtains his desire (BU.I.3.28). In other words, the Lord bestows his Grace on those who 'choose' his leading, and 'disgraces' those who do not seek it. In the same way the King may or may not 'choose' the guidance of a qualified Purohita: in our text it is clear that the choice has been made, and the spoken words are those of the Purohita expressing his acceptance of the King whom he will 'cause to perform right acts', and therefore to prosper.

70. In *Heres* 258, Philo calls Sarah the *ek physeōs archousan aretēn* and in *Abr.* 99 Philo takes *arete* masculine to *logismos* feminine.

71. Cf. TS.I.6.7.4 'The sacrificer is a bolt (*vajra*), the enemy (*bhrātr̄vyam*) of man is want (*kṣudram*); in that he fasts and does not eat, he straightway smites with a bolt, the enemy, want'; similarly II.5.6.6.

72. In an analysis of the ruling passions of the various human kinds or castes in A.III.363 it is interesting to compare those attributed to the Kṣatriya with those attributed to women: both lists of qualities end in the same way, 'his vocation is to rule' (*issariya pariyoṣāna*, over which Sirī presides, *Jātaka* nos.382), and 'her vocation is to rule'. The word *pariyoṣāna* (Skr. *pari-ava-syu*) almost literally 'tie-up' or 'connection', means vocation, function, entelechy, goal, as may be seen from the fact that in the same context the Samāṇa's *Pariyoṣāna* is *nibbāna*, and the Householder's (whose 'support is an art') is 'perfected work'. It is not meant that it is the Kṣatriya's and woman's mere *ambition* to rule, but

that it pertains to them to do so. In other words, the characteristically royal and feminine function is that of *administration*; the one administering a kingdom, the other a household (cf. Proverbs, XXXI.10f.). 'Administration' implies, of course, the presence of another and authoritative principle, on behalf of which the 'administrator' acts. It is well known that the Indian woman, in fact, 'rules' the house.

There is another way in which the King and the woman correspond: both are 'devoted'. We have already seen that the King's patronage of the Brāhmaṇa corresponds to Indra's bestowal of his 'share' (*bhāgām*, RV.VIII.100.1; cf. note 6) on Agni, and that this offering makes the King a bhaktā; it is in the same way that the wife offers his share of the meal to her husband before partaking of what is left, the remains of her sacrifice. It would be as 'incorrect' for her to eat with him as it would be for the King to eat with his Purohita.

It is by no means an accident, or merely historical 'development' that 'the doctrine of *bhakti*' should have been so little emphasized in the Upaniṣads and so much in BG. For it is the Way of Gnosis (*jñānamārga*) that pertains to the Brāhmaṇa, and the emotional Way of Devotion (*bhaktimārga*), which is also a Way of Sacrificial Action (*karmamārga*), that pertains to the King. The relation of a vassal to a feudal lord, which is also that of the Regnum to the Sacerdotium, is essentially one of 'loyalty' (a word that better than 'devotion', perhaps, conveys the meaning of *bhakti*), and that is precisely the relation of the woman to the man, her 'lord'; there is a real equivalence of the Japanese *harakiri* and the Indian *sati*, and it is in the same way that the 'soul' (always f.) must 'put itself to death' for the sake of the spirit to which it owes allegiance.

We can see all this as clearly in the connection of European Chivalry (*ksatram*) with a devotional mysticism, and in the corresponding Šūfi devotional literature, with its 'Fidèles de l'Amour', as in India. As has been pointed out by René Guénon, 'Nous ne pouvons que singular... le rôle important que joue le plus souvent un élément féminin, ou représenté symboliquement comme tel, dans les doctrines des Kshatriyas... Ce fait peut s'expliquer, d'une part, par la prépondérance de l'élément "rajasique" et émotif chez les Kshatriyas, et surtout, d'autre part, par la correspondance du féminin, dans l'ordre cosmique, avec Prakriti ou "La Nature primordiale", principe du devenir et de la mutation temporelle' (*Autorité spirituelle et Pouvoir temporel*, 1930, p. 93, note 1).

'We must point out... the important role frequently played by a feminine element, or an element symbolically represented as such in the doctrines of the Kṣatriyas... This fact may be explained, on the one hand, by a preponderance of the "rājasic" or emotional element in the Kṣatriyas, and, on the other hand (and most of all), by the correspondence of the feminine, in the cosmic order, with Prakriti or "primordial Nature", the principle of becoming and of temporal mutation'. (*Spiritual Authority and Temporal Power*, by René Guénon, 1930, p. 93, note 1).

The Sacerdotium and the man are the intellectual, and the Regnum and the woman the active elements in what should be literally a symphony. Over against the intellectuality and continence that are proper in the former the emotional and erotic qualities of the latter are in due proportion, necessary and indispensable to society; for without the softer woof to be combined with the harder weft, the social tissue could not be woven at all. But it must also be realised that in any normal decadence (such as that of the last centuries in Europe), the progressive 'emancipation' of the less intellectual and more emotional elements in the community will mean the gradual substitution of feeling for knowing as a basis for judgement in conduct or art. In ethics, the notion of altruism will take the place of that of justice; in literature, words will more and more be used for their emotive effect than treated as the vehicle of thought. We ultimately reach just such a condition of sentimentality as is characteristic of modern societies; and it need hardly be pointed out that if the social tissue is to be woven entirely of the softer elements, it cannot be expected to wear well.

73. For the Marriage of Sky and Earth, see Aeschylus, Loeb classical Library, ed.II.395.

74. 'O Agni, the wise one, do thou avert for us the anger of Varuṇa, the God' (RV.IV.1.4, TS.II.5.12.3); 'May he (Agni) save us from the overwhelming duress, the curse, the overwhelming wrong... from Varuṇa's craft' (RV.I.128. 5-7); 'Thou, Agni, hast freed the Gods from their curse' (RV.VII.13.2), and similar texts. By the same token, Brhaspati is the 'remitter of debts.'

75. JB.III.200 'The Gods to whom no offering is made do not eat': PB.XIV. 6.8 (Indra addressing Kutsa) 'Offer a Sacrifice to me, for I am hungry'.

As Keith has pointed out (HOS XXXI.259) the basis of the Sacrifice is an exchange of gifts. We find the Sacrificer saying: 'Give thou to me; I shall give to thee... Accept my offering, I shall accept thy offering'

that it pertains to them to do so. In other words, the characteristically royal and feminine function is that of *administration*; the one administering a kingdom, the other a household (cf. Proverbs, XXXI.10f.). 'Administration' implies, of course, the presence of another and authoritative principle, on behalf of which the 'administrator' acts. It is well known that the Indian woman, in fact, 'rules' the house.

There is another way in which the King and the woman correspond: both are 'devoted'. We have already seen that the King's patronage of the Brāhmaṇa corresponds to Indra's bestowal of his 'share' (*bhāgām*, RV.VIII.100.1; cf. note 6) on Agni, and that this offering makes the King a bhaktā; it is in the same way that the wife offers his share of the meal to her husband before partaking of what is left, the remains of her sacrifice. It would be as 'incorrect' for her to eat with him as it would be for the King to eat with his Purohita.

It is by no means an accident, or merely historical 'development' that 'the doctrine of *bhakti*' should have been so little emphasized in the Upaniṣads and so much in BG. For it is the Way of Gnosis (*jñānamārga*) that pertains to the Brāhmaṇa, and the emotional Way of Devotion (*bhaktimārga*), which is also a Way of Sacrificial Action (*karmamārga*), that pertains to the King. The relation of a vassal to a feudal lord, which is also that of the Regnum to the Sacerdotium, is essentially one of 'loyalty' (a word that better than 'devotion', perhaps, conveys the meaning of *bhakti*), and that is precisely the relation of the woman to the man, her 'lord'; there is a real equivalence of the Japanese *harakiri* and the Indian *sati*, and it is in the same way that the 'soul' (always f.) must 'put itself to death' for the sake of the spirit to which it owes allegiance.

We can see all this as clearly in the connection of European Chivalry (*kṣatram*) with a devotional mysticism, and in the corresponding Śūfi devotional literature, with its 'Fidèles de l'Amour', as in India. As has been pointed out by René Guénon, 'Nous ne pouvons que singuler... le rôle important que joue le plus souvent un élément féminin, ou représenté symboliquement comme tel, dans les doctrines des Kshatriyas... Ce fait peut s'expliquer, d'une part, par la prépondérance de l'élément "rajasiq" et émotif chez les Kshatriyas, et surtout, d'autre part, par la correspondance du féminin, dans l'ordre cosmique, avec Prakṛiti ou "La Nature primordiale", principe du devenir et de la mutation temporelle' (*Autorité spirituelle et Pouvoir temporel*, 1930, p. 93, note 1).

'We must point out... the important role frequently played by a feminine element, or an element symbolically represented as such in the doctrines of the Kṣatriyas... This fact may be explained, on the one hand, by a preponderance of the "rājasic" or emotional element in the Kṣatriyas, and, on the other hand (and most of all), by the correspondence of the feminine, in the cosmic order, with Prakṛiti or "primordial Nature", the principle of becoming and of temporal mutation'. (*Spiritual Authority and Temporal Power*, by René Guénon, 1930, p. 93, note 1).

The Sacerdotium and the man are the intellectual, and the Regnum and the woman the active elements in what should be literally a symphony. Over against the intellectuality and continence that are proper in the former the emotional and erotic qualities of the latter are in due proportion, necessary and indispensable to society; for without the softer woof to be combined with the harder weft, the social tissue could not be woven at all. But it must also be realised that in any normal decadence (such as that of the last centuries in Europe), the progressive 'emancipation' of the less intellectual and more emotional elements in the community will mean the gradual substitution of feeling for knowing as a basis for judgement in conduct or art. In ethics, the notion of altruism will take the place of that of justice; in literature, words will more and more be used for their emotive effect than treated as the vehicle of thought. We ultimately reach just such a condition of sentimentality as is characteristic of modern societies; and it need hardly be pointed out that if the social tissue is to be woven entirely of the softer elements, it cannot be expected to wear well.

73. For the Marriage of Sky and Earth, see Aeschylus, Loeb classical Library, ed.II.395.

74. 'O Agni, the wise one, do thou avert for us the anger of Varuṇa, the God' (RV.IV.1.4, TS.II.5.12.3); 'May he (Agni) save us from the overwhelming duress, the curse, the overwhelming wrong... from Varuṇa's craft' (RV.I.128. 5-7); 'Thou, Agni, hast freed the Gods from their curse' (RV.VII.13.2), and similar texts. By the same token, Bṛhaspati is the 'remitter of debts'.

75. JB.III.200 'The Gods to whom no offering is made do not eat': PB.XIV. 6.8 (Indra addressing Kutsa) 'Offer a Sacrifice to me, for I am hungry'.

As Keith has pointed out (HOS XXXI.259) the basis of the Sacrifice is an exchange of gifts. We find the Sacrificer saying: 'Give thou to me; I shall give to thee... Accept my offering, I shall accept thy offering'

(TS.I.8.4.1), and 'with what goods (*dhánena*) I barter, seeking goods with goods, may that become more for me, not less' (AV.III.15.5,6); 'What the Sacrificer does for the Gods here, that they do for him there' (JU.I.233); 'Indra does not rob his worshipper, but returns his gifts more abundantly' (RV.VI.28.2), cf. AV.III.15.1 where Indra is called a 'trader' (*vanijam*) and as such contrasted with the 'miser' (*árātīm*). This is, indeed, a *commerce* of man with God, but in the primary sense of the word, that of establishing personal relationships (Webster, 2), rather than in that of our modern 'business'. Even today the Indian shopkeeper is apt to ask: 'Do you think I am in business only for profit?' The trans-action is paralleled in the lavish exchanges of useful gifts which we meet with as a worldwide practise in 'primitive' societies where, at the same time that the actual benefits of a 'trade' are secured, the main purpose is that of the cementing of friendly and reciprocal relations. An enduring friendship, all on one side and without reciprocity of any kind, would be unreal.

The commerce of the *Do ut des* texts is, moreover, identical with that implied by the term *bhakti* = *bhāga*, literally 'share' or 'portion', from √*bhaj* to 'apportion'. Thus in RV.X.51.8 Agni only consents to conduct the Sacrifice on condition of receiving his 'portion' of the oblation (*haviṣo datta bhāgám*), cf. II. 10.6 where the Sacrificer thinks of himself as winning 'wealth' (*dhanasāḥ*) by his invocation. As we have seen (note 6, q.v.), and as is also evident from the fact that the sacrificial commerce is really an exchange of wedding gifts, the implied agreement or mutual understanding (*samjñāna*) has as much to do with love as with advantage. A man does not 'love' his wife the less because he 'provides for' her and she 'serves' him or his, as we are God's, to 'love, honor and obey him'. It is the same in feudal relations, where the 'devotion' of thane to Earl (as in *Beowulf*) is of just the same sort as that of the woman to the man or the man to God. If love be literally a 'lik (en) ing', we cannot really love anyone, other than one whose will we do, or one who does our will.

The Sacrifice is a 'devotion', and that is as much as to say a self-sacrifice; and in fact, while the God is archetypally the victim, in the ritual mimesis the Sacrificer identifies himself with the actual victim, as is often explicit: 'the Fire knows that he has come to give himself to me' (*paridām me*, SB.II.4.1,11, cf. IX.3.2.7 *yajñó vai devánām ātmā, yajñá u evá yājamānasya*), and hence the distinction of the 'self-sacrificer' (*ātmayājī*) from the mere 'sacrificer', SB.XI.2.6.13.14, cf. Eggeling's note on SB.I.2.3.5. In the last analysis, the Sacrificer is

exchanging or, if we prefer to say so, 'bartering' his own eye for the Sun's, his own for the divine substance. (*Mathnawī* I.922 'His eye for ours, what a goodly recompense!').

The language of commerce, in fact, survives in the most characteristically devotional contexts, for example in Mīrā Bāī's well-known song:

Kānh have I bought. The price he asked, I gave.
Some cry, ' 'Tis great', and others jeer ' 'Tis small'—
I gave in full, weighed to the utmost grain,
My love, my life, my self, my soul, my all.

It would be very difficult to show that it was in any other spirit that the Sacrificer made himself over to Agni. It is only our own bias that stands in the way of a realisation of the real content. If the virtue of self-sacrifice is, no more than any other virtue, 'its own reward' but is with a view to results ('Thine may we be, for thee to give us treasure', RV.II.2.1), the last end in view being that of a rebirth from the Fire in an immortal body of glory, this consciousness of ends, whether here or hereafter (metaphysical rites have always in view to secure both of these ends), no more implies a 'loveless' relationship than does a feudal or marital 'contract'.

We must not be distracted from a realization of this by the unquestionable fact that, as Keith has rightly pointed out, the sacrificial gift is by no means a thank-offering, or by the fact that there is no word in Hindi for 'thanks'. The Indian point of view is that we do not say 'thanks'; we do something about it. The beggar who receives alms offers no thanks; he has favored the giver with an opportunity to be generous. The whole stress, indeed, is upon the aristocratic virtue of generosity, not on the servile expression of gratitude. Our notion that 'Virtue is its own reward', so far from being admirable, is only the expression of a cynical disbelief in an ultimate order and justice, a distrust in man's or God's magnanimity. In all interpretation of the Vedic Sacrifice by European scholars there must always be discounted their (often unconscious) anti-traditional, and especially anti-feudal and anti-clerical, prejudices.

76. Caland, in annotation of PB.VII.10.3 renders *dhūmam* by 'fog' and so misses the whole point. It is because all gifts are essentially sacrifices that 'A gift is given with the words "This is smoke"' (JUB.I.58.6 and CU.V.8). Nothing more profound than this has ever been said about giving.

Cf. JB.III.216—Ascent of oblation, descent of rain dependent on

(TS.I.8.4.1), and 'with what goods (*dhánena*) I barter, seeking goods with goods, may that become more for me, not less' (AV.III.15.5,6); 'What the Sacrificer does for the Gods here, that they do for him there' (JU.I.233); 'Indra does not rob his worshipper, but returns his gifts more abundantly' (RV.VI.28.2), cf. AV.III.15.1 where Indra is called a 'trader' (*vanijam*) and as such contrasted with the 'miser' (*árātim*). This is, indeed, a *commerce* of man with God, but in the primary sense of the word, that of establishing personal relationships (Webster, 2), rather than in that of our modern 'business'. Even today the Indian shopkeeper is apt to ask: 'Do you think I am in business only for profit?' The trans-action is paralleled in the lavish exchanges of useful gifts which we meet with as a worldwide practise in 'primitive' societies where, at the same time that the actual benefits of a 'trade' are secured, the main purpose is that of the cementing of friendly and reciprocal relations. An enduring friendship, all on one side and without reciprocity of any kind, would be unreal.

The commerce of the *Do ut des* texts is, moreover, identical with that implied by the term *bhakti* = *bhāga*, literally 'share' or 'portion', from √*bhaj* to 'apportion'. Thus in RV.X.51.8 Agni only consents to conduct the Sacrifice on condition of receiving his 'portion' of the oblation (*haviṣo datta bhāgám*), cf. II. 10.6 where the Sacrificer thinks of himself as winning 'wealth' (*dhanasāḥ*) by his invocation. As we have seen (note 6, q.v.), and as is also evident from the fact that the sacrificial commerce is really an exchange of wedding gifts, the implied agreement or mutual understanding (*samjñāna*) has as much to do with love as with advantage. A man does not 'love' his wife the less because he 'provides for' her and she 'serves' him or his, as we are God's, to 'love, honor and obey him'. It is the same in feudal relations, where the 'devotion' of thane to Earl (as in *Beowulf*) is of just the same sort as that of the woman to the man or the man to God. If love be literally a 'lik (en) ing', we cannot really love anyone, other than one whose will we do, or one who does our will.

The Sacrifice is a 'devotion', and that is as much as to say a self-sacrifice; and in fact, while the God is archetypally the victim, in the ritual mimesis the Sacrificer identifies himself with the actual victim, as is often explicit: 'the Fire knows that he has come to give himself to me' (*paridām me*, SB.II.4.1,11, cf. IX.3.2.7 *yajñó vai devánām atmá, yajñá u evá yājamānasya*), and hence the distinction of the 'self-sacrificer' (*ātmayājī*) from the mere 'sacrificer', SB.XI.2.6.13.14, cf. Eggeling's note on SB.I.2.3.5. In the last analysis, the Sacrificer is

exchanging or, if we prefer to say so, 'bartering' his own eye for the Sun's, his own for the divine substance. (*Mathnawī* I.922 'His eye for ours, what a goodly recompense!').

The language of commerce, in fact, survives in the most characteristically devotional contexts, for example in Mīrā Bāī's well-known song:

Kānh have I bought. The price he asked, I gave.
Some cry, ' 'Tis great', and others jeer ' 'Tis small'—
I gave in full, weighed to the utmost grain,
My love, my life, my self, my soul, my all.

It would be very difficult to show that it was in any other spirit that the Sacrificer made himself over to Agni. It is only our own bias that stands in the way of a realisation of the real content. If the virtue of self-sacrifice is, no more than any other virtue, 'its own reward' but is with a view to results ('Thine may we be, for thee to give us treasure', RV.II.2.1), the last end in view being that of a rebirth from the Fire in an immortal body of glory, this consciousness of ends, whether here or hereafter (metaphysical rites have always in view to secure both of these ends), no more implies a 'loveless' relationship than does a feudal or marital 'contract'.

We must not be distracted from a realization of this by the unquestionable fact that, as Keith has rightly pointed out, the sacrificial gift is by no means a thank-offering, or by the fact that there is no word in Hindī for 'thanks'. The Indian point of view is that we do not say 'thanks'; we do something about it. The beggar who receives alms offers no thanks; he has favored the giver with an opportunity to be generous. The whole stress, indeed, is upon the aristocratic virtue of generosity, not on the servile expression of gratitude. Our notion that 'Virtue is its own reward', so far from being admirable, is only the expression of a cynical disbelief in an ultimate order and justice, a distrust in man's or God's magnanimity. In all interpretation of the Vedic Sacrifice by European scholars there must always be discounted their (often unconscious) anti-traditional, and especially anti-feudal and anti-clerical, prejudices.

76. Caland, in annotation of PB.VII.10.3 renders *dhūmam* by 'fog' and so misses the whole point. It is because all gifts are essentially sacrifices that 'A gift is given with the words "This is smoke"' (JUB.I.58.6 and CU.V.8). Nothing more profound than this has ever been said about giving.

Cf. JB.III.216—Ascent of oblation, descent of rain dependent on

performance of Sacrifice: when omitted, gods and men *both* hunger. See also AB.IV.27, SB.VII.3.1.29-30. SB. IX.4.4.3.

77. 'It is upon the observance of ritual that the governance of a State depends' (Confucius, *Analects*, XI.25). 'Wherever the idea of divine kingship prevails we find coupled with it the conviction that upon the correct performance of kingly ritual depends the whole welfare of the State, the fertility of its lands, the fruitfulness of its trees, the fecundity both of its women and of its herds and flocks'. (Waley, *The Analects of Confucius*, p. 65; *Odyssey* XIX.109f; A.C.L. Brown, *Grail Legend*, p. 133; Chrétien, vs.4679). Waley further points out that the 'power that enabled Divine Kings to deal with all things under Heaven' depended not only upon the correct performance of the rites but also upon an understanding of them; this is just as it is in the Indian texts where it is only to the comprehensor (*evamvit; ya evam veda*) that the ultimate benefits of any given rite really accrue.

78. In SB.IX.3.2.1 and 4 the Shower of Wealth (*vāsordhārā*) is both 'Agni's Shower' inasmuch as he is the Vasu, and also the 'Shower of Wealth' with which he is aspersed (*abhiṣikta*) as Emperor. SB.IX.3.3.15-19 explains its nature: 'Its self or body (*ātman*) is the sky, the cloud its udder, lightning its teat, the shower the shower (of rain); from the Sky it comes to the cow (i.e. from the Sky as archetypal cow to the earthly cow, so that on earth), its self or body is the cow. . . its shower the shower (of milk); and from the cow it comes to the Sacrificer. He (in turn) is its self or body, his arm its udder, the offering ladle its teat, the shower (of *ghī*). From the Sacrificer to the Gods; from the Gods to the cow; from the cow to the Sacrificer; thus circulates this perpetual, never ending food of the Gods. And, verily, whosoever is a Comprehensor thereof, for him shall there be thus this perpetual never-ending Food' (the Bread of Life). See also TS.V.4.8 and 7.3., and IV.7.1.

This same 'circulation' is more briefly formulated in BG.III.10-14; the successive terms of the endless series being *karman* (acts of the Sacrificer), *yañja* (the Sacrifice), *parjanya* (rain), *bhātāni* (creatures), *anna* (food), and then again *karman*, and so without end. In MU.VI.37 the application is made to the interior Sacrifice: here the rain from above is the Chant (*udgītha*) 'whereby living beings here on earth live'.

Thus again we find that the performance of the Sacrifice is the basis of the prosperity of the realm: it is from this point of view that in Mbh. (Vana Parva, XXV) Bhīma addresses a king with the words, 'Thy hand can rain gold'. The source is inexhaustible; but the stream is

not a stagnant one, only by the Sacrifice can it be kept in circulation.

The *vasordhārā* doctrine outlined above explains the iconography of the series of representations of the Cakravartin Emperor at Amarāvatī, of which I republished several in an article entitled 'A Royal Gesture' in the *Feestbundel v.d.K. Bataviaasch Genootschap van Kunsten en Wetenschappen*, Weltevreden, Pt. 1, 1929; and republished here as Frontispiece. In these representations the Cakravartin, surrounded by his 'Seven Treasures', is raising his right arm to the clouds, from which a shower of coins i.e. 'wealth', *vasu*) is falling. It is manifest that the Emperor's hand is the 'ladle' of the Sacrifice, and that it is raised in accordance with SB.VII.2.3.9 where the offering of *ghī* is fivefold, to agree with the five strata of the altar and 'when he offers, he raises (the ladle) and so builds Agnī up with his five strata.' Cf. Dh.186 *Kahapanavarsa* and JB.III.216.

However T.N. Ramachandran in *Papers published by the Rao Sahib G.V. Ramamurthi Pantulu's Birthday Celebration Committee* connects the Cakravartin types of Amarāvati, Jagayyapeta and Goli with the Māndhātu Jātaka.

79. Unlike Agni, the Sacerdotium, 'not vain-glorious because of his Counsel' (*kratvā. . . apradr̥pitah*, RV.I.145.2).

80. All political systems which directly contravene the law of nature and the liberties of the spiritual power, are necessarily short-lived' (George Avery, SSM., in *New English Weekly*, July 25, 1940). 'Division between Church and Lay, that is what shall subsist now. . . Church shall be enslaved by State. . . evil shall overtake the State. . . By perfidy of all men the fruits of the earth shall perish, the mast of trees and the produce of the waters' (from the interpretation of Dermot's dream, Standish H.O'Grady, *Silva Gadelica*, II, p.84). 'Verily, so long as Indra knew not that Self, so long the Titans overcame him. . . When he knew, then striking down and conquering the Titans, he compassed the chieftaincy, autonomous rule and overlordship of all Gods and all beings' (Kaus. U.IV.20). In Platonic terms, there can be no stability where there is no agreement as to which shall rule, the better or the worse part. 'Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to a desolation' (Luke XI.17).

81. AV.X.2.30—*Purāḥ yo brahmaṇo veda yasyāḥ puruṣa ucyate*. He who knows the fullness of Brahma, from which (fulness) He is called *puruṣa*; BU.II.5.18—*Sa vaa ayam puruṣāḥ sarvāṁsu pūrṣu puriṣayāḥ*=He on account of his dwelling in all bodies is called the Puruṣa.

82. Most Chinese philosophic schools have taught the way of what

performance of Sacrifice: when omitted, gods and men *both* hunger. See also AB.IV.27, ŚB.VII.3.1.29-30. ŚB. IX.4.4.3.

77. 'It is upon the observance of ritual that the governance of a State depends' (Confucius, *Analects*, XI.25). 'Wherever the idea of divine kingship prevails we find coupled with it the conviction that upon the correct performance of kingly ritual depends the whole welfare of the State, the fertility of its lands, the fruitfulness of its trees, the fecundity both of its women and of its herds and flocks'. (Waley, *The Analects of Confucius*, p. 65; *Odyssey* XIX.109f; A.C.L. Brown, *Grail Legend*, p. 133; Chrétien, vs.4679). Waley further points out that the 'power that enabled Divine Kings to deal with all things under Heaven' depended not only upon the correct performance of the rites but also upon an understanding of them; this is just as it is in the Indian texts where it is only to the comprehensor (*evamvit; ya evam veda*) that the ultimate benefits of any given rite really accrue.

78. In ŚB.IX.3.2.1 and 4 the Shower of Wealth (*vāsordhārā*) is both 'Agnī's Shower' inasmuch as he is the Vasu, and also the 'Shower of Wealth' with which he is aspersed (*abhiṣikta*) as Emperor. ŚB.IX.3.3.15-19 explains its nature: 'Its self or body (*ātman*) is the sky, the cloud its udder, lightning its teat, the shower the shower (of rain); from the Sky it comes to the cow (i.e. from the Sky as archetypal cow to the earthly cow, so that on earth), its self or body is the cow. . . its shower the shower (of milk); and from the cow it comes to the Sacrificer. He (in turn) is its self or body, his arm its udder, the offering ladle its teat, the shower (of ghee). From the Sacrificer to the Gods; from the Gods to the cow; from the cow to the Sacrificer; thus circulates this perpetual, never ending food of the Gods. And, verily, whosoever is a Comprehensor thereof, for him shall there be thus this perpetual never-ending Food' (the Bread of Life). See also TS.V.4.8 and 7.3., and IV.7.1.

This same 'circulation' is more briefly formulated in BG.III.10-14; the successive terms of the endless series being *karman* (acts of the Sacrificer), *yañja* (the Sacrifice), *parjanya* (rain), *bhātāni* (creatures), *anna* (food), and then again *karman*, and so without end. In MU.VI.37 the application is made to the interior Sacrifice: here the rain from above is the Chant (*udgītha*) 'whereby living beings here on earth live'.

Thus again we find that the performance of the Sacrifice is the basis of the prosperity of the realm: it is from this point of view that in Mbh. (Vana Parva, XXV) Bhīma addresses a king with the words, 'Thy hand can rain gold'. The source is inexhaustible; but the stream is

not a stagnant one, only by the Sacrifice can it be kept in circulation.

The *vasordhārā* doctrine outlined above explains the iconography of the series of representations of the Cakravartin Emperor at Amarāvatī, of which I republished several in an article entitled 'A Royal Gesture' in the *Feestbundel v.d.K. Bataviaasch Genootschap van Kunsten en Wetenschappen*, Weltevreden, Pt. 1, 1929; and republished here as Frontispiece. In these representations the Cakravartin, surrounded by his 'Seven Treasures', is raising his right arm to the clouds, from which a shower of coins i.e. 'wealth', *vasu*) is falling. It is manifest that the Emperor's hand is the 'ladle' of the Sacrifice, and that it is raised in accordance with ŚB.VII.2.3.9 where the offering of *ghī* is fivefold, to agree with the five strata of the altar and 'when he offers, he raises (the ladle) and so builds Agnī up with his five strata.' Cf. Dh.186 *Kahapanavarsa* and JB.III.216.

However T.N. Ramachandran in *Papers published by the Rao Sahib G.V. Ramamurthi Pantalu's Birthday Celebration Committee* connects the Cakravartin types of Amarāvati, Jagayyapeta and Goli with the Māndhātu Jātaka.

79. Unlike Agni, the Sacerdotium, 'not vain-glorious because of his Counsel' (*kratvā. . . apradṛpitah*, RV.I.145.2).

80. All political systems which directly contravene the law of nature and the liberties of the spiritual power, are necessarily short-lived' (George Avery, SSM., in *New English Weekly*, July 25, 1940). 'Division between Church and Lay, that is what shall subsist now. . . Church shall be enslaved by State. . . evil shall overtake the State. . . By perfidy of all men the fruits of the earth shall perish, the mast of trees and the produce of the waters' (from the interpretation of Dermot's dream, Standish H.O'Grady, *Silva Gadelica*, II, p.84). 'Verily, so long as Indra knew not that Self, so long the Titans overcame him. . . When he knew, then striking down and conquering the Titans, he compassed the chieftaincy, autonomous rule and overlordship of all Gods and all beings' (Kaus. U.IV.20). In Platonic terms, there can be no stability where there is no agreement as to which shall rule, the better or the worse part. 'Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to a desolation' (Luke XI.17).

81. AV.X.2.30—*Purāṇ yo brahmaṇo veda yasyāḥ puruṣa ucyate*. He who knows the fullness of Brahma, from which (fulness) He is called *puruṣa*; BU.II.5.18—*Sa vaa ayam puruṣāḥ sarvāṁsu pūrṣu puriṣayāḥ*=He on account of his dwelling in all bodies is called the Puruṣa.

82. Most Chinese philosophic schools have taught the way of what

is called the 'Inner Sage and Outer King'. The Inner Sage is a person who has established virtue in himself: the Outer King is one who has accomplished great deeds in the world. The highest ideal for a man is at once to possess the virtue of a Sage and the accomplishment of a Ruler, and so become what is called a Sage-king (Janaka), or what Plato would term the Philosopher-king' (Fung Yu-lan, *History of Chinese Philosophy*, translated by Derk Bodde, Peiping, 1937, p. 2). The Inner Sage, the *prajñātman*, is the Emperor, or King of kings, the *jīvātman* the Viceroy, and it is for the latter and active self to do what the former and contemplative self enjoins, not to 'do as he likes'

83. *Republic* 432 C, etc. Plato's doctrine of the individual 'city' is exactly paralleled in the Indian *brahmapura* ('City of God') contexts. For example, '(This body) with its eight 'circles' and nine apertures is Ayodhyā ['unconquerable'], the City of the Gods, its golden treasury [heart] enfolded by the light of heaven; he who is a Comprehensor of that City of Brahma, by immortality enfolded, him Brahma and Brahman (Comm. Paramātman and Prajāpati) dower with life, renown and progeny (AV.X.2.29–31)'. 'The Puri and Mathurā is in every man, the kingdom of his own mind, where the personal self is to be put down . . . the Karmsa in each of us' (P.N. Sinha, *A study of the Bhāgavata Purāna*, 1901, p. 300). 'One who has slain his Vṛtra' (TS.II.5.4.5) has done this.

84. The distinction of births in JB.I.17 corresponds exactly to that of John III.6 'That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit', and Gal.VI.8 'For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.'

The 'two selves' of the Sanskrit texts, Plato's 'mortal and immortal parts of the soul', are the Outer and Inner Man, *that which is outward* and *that which is inward*, of II Cor.IV.16: of which St. Thomas Aquinas remarks 'In man are two natures (an echo of Plato's *duo phamen auto anagkation cīnai*, *Republic* 604b—two distinct principles in man), his spiritual nature and his corporeal nature. And a man is said to love himself by reason of his loving himself with regard to his spiritual nature (Sum.Theol.II.26.4, as in BU.IV.5.6, etc.). See also Aristotle on 'self-love'.

It is with reference to the corporeal self or 'life',—the Buddhist 'petty self' (*appatīmo*) 'which is not my (real) self' *na me so ātta, paśuṁ*—that Christ says 'If any man come to me, and hate not . . . his own life also, he cannot be my disciple' (Luke XIV.26), and with reference to

their division Plato's katharsis, the 'separating of soul from body, so far as that is possible', *Phaedo* 67c) that St. Paul affirms that the Word of God (sc. all *śruti*) extends to the sundering of soul from spirit (Heb.IV.12). The distinction is that which is drawn by Philo (*Quaestiones in Genesis*, II.59 and *De Cherub.* 113f., as cited by Goodenough, *By Light, Light*, pp. 374, 375) between 'us' and 'that which was before our birth' and will be (cf.BG. II.12) 'when we, who in our junction with our bodies, are mixtures, shall not exist, but shall be brought into the rebirth', i.e. 'born again' of the Divine Womb in the sense of JB.I.17 and John III.3.

The 'two selves' are, again, the *proprium* and the *suum* (*le moi* and *le soi*) of St. Bernard. We 'naturally' identify 'ourselves' with the *proprium*, 'our' individuality as known by 'name and aspect' (*nāmarūpa*), 'this man' to which we return from the sacrificial deification thinking: 'Now am I he who I really am' (*ahám yá evāmi sāsmi*, SB.I.9.3.23), and to which the King returns with the same words at the end of the Rājasūya in which he had been made a Brāhman (AB.VII.24); which comings back to one self are in the most technical sense of the word 'desecrations'. In thus returning we are forgetting that the *proprium* to which we return is not our real Self, not really an essence at all, but only a process. It is, on the other hand, with reference to our essence, St. Bernard's *suum*, that it is said 'That art thou' (CU.VI.8.7f.), and with reference to that Self 'the Overlord and King of all beings' (BU.II.5.15), that the Oracle enjoins, *γνῶθι σεαυτὸν* (*gnōthi seauton*). When Philosophia enquires of Boethius what he is, and he answers 'a reasoning and mortal animal', she tells him that he has 'forgotten' who he is and warns him: 'If thou knowest not thyself, depart' (*Deconsol.*, prose vi and *Cant.* 1.8).

The injunction 'Know thyself' is paralleled in the questions of the Brāhmaṇas and Upaniṣads, 'Which self?' (*katarah sa ātmā*, AA.II.6; *katamā ātmā* BU.IV.3.7, MU.II.1; and similarly *ken'attānā*, S.508) and 'In whom, when I go forth hence, shall I be going forth?' (*kasmin. . . utkrānto bhavisyāmī*, *Prajña* U.VI.3) with the answer in CU.III.14.4 'in Brahma'. The true answer to the question 'Who art thou?' (*kas tvam asi*), viz. 'What thou art, that light am I' (*ko 'ham asmi suvas tvam*), is the password that opens the gates of the Kingdom of Heaven and wins the welcome 'Come in, O myself' (JUB.III.14.1-5; Kaus. U.I.5-6; Rūmī, *Mathnawī*, I.3062 f.). Incidentally, I am convinced that the Delphic *γνῶθι σεαυτὸν* (*gnōthi seauton*) and E are a question (*signum*) and an answer (*responsum*) asked and given at the

is called the 'Inner Sage and Outer King'. The Inner Sage is a person who has established virtue in himself: the Outer King is one who has accomplished great deeds in the world. The highest ideal for a man is at once to possess the virtue of a Sage and the accomplishment of a Ruler, and so become what is called a Sage-king (Janaka), or what Plato would term the Philosopher-king' (Fung Yu-lan, *History of Chinese Philosophy*, translated by Derk Bodde, Peiping, 1937, p. 2). The Inner Sage, the *prajñātman*, is the Emperor, or King of kings, the *jivātman* the Viceroy, and it is for the latter and active self to do what the former and contemplative self enjoins, not to 'do as he likes'

83. *Republic* 432 C, etc. Plato's doctrine of the individual 'city' is exactly paralleled in the Indian *brahmapura* ('City of God') contexts. For example, '(This body) with its eight 'circles' and nine apertures is Ayodhyā ['unconquerable'], the City of the Gods, its golden treasury [heart] enfolded by the light of heaven; he who is a Comprehensor of that City of Brahma, by immortality enfolded, him Brahma and Brahman (Comm. Paramātman and Prajāpati) dower with life, renown and progeny (AV.X.2.29–31)'. 'The Puri and Mathurā is in every man, the kingdom of his own mind, where the personal self is to be put down . . . the Karṇa in each of us' (P.N. Sinha, *A study of the Bhāgavata Purāṇa*, 1901, p. 300). 'One who has slain his Vṛtra' (TS.II.5.4.5) has done this.

84. The distinction of births in JB.I.17 corresponds exactly to that of John III.6 'That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit', and Gal.VI.8 'For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.'

The 'two selves' of the Sanskrit texts, Plato's 'mortal and immortal parts of the soul', are the Outer and Inner Man, *that which is outward* and *that which is inward*, of II Cor.IV.16: of which St. Thomas Aquinas remarks '*In man are two natures* (an echo of Plato's *duo phamen auto anagkaion einai*, *Republic* 604b—two distinct principles in man), *his spiritual nature and his corporeal nature*. *And a man is said to love himself by reason of his loving himself with regard to his spiritual nature* (Sum.Theol.II.26.4, as in BU.IV.5.6, etc.). See also Aristotle on 'self-love'.

It is with reference to the corporeal self or 'life',—the Buddhist 'petty self' (*appātumo*) 'which is not my (real) self' *na me so ātta, passim*—that Christ says 'If any man come to me, and hate not. . . his own life also, he cannot be my disciple' (Luke XIV.26), and with reference to

their division Plato's katharsis, the 'separating of soul from body, so far as that is possible', *Phaedo* 67c) that St. Paul affirms that the Word of God (sc. all *śruti*) extends to the sundering of soul from spirit (Heb.IV.12). The distinction is that which is drawn by Philo (*Quaestiones in Genesis*, II.59 and *De Cherub.*113f., as cited by Goodenough, *By Light, Light*, pp. 374, 375) between 'us' and 'that which was before our birth' and will be (cf.BG. II.12) 'when we, who in our junction with our bodies, are mixtures, shall not exist, but shall be brought into the rebirth', i.e. 'born again' of the Divine Womb in the sense of JB.I.17 and John III.3.

The 'two selves' are, again, the *proprium* and the *suum* (*le moi and le soi*) of St. Bernard. We 'naturally' identify 'ourselves' with the *proprium*, 'our' individuality as known by 'name and aspect' (*nāmarūpa*), 'this man' to which we return from the sacrificial deification thinking: 'Now am I he who I really am' (*ahám yá evásmi sāsmi*, SB.I.9.3.23), and to which the King returns with the same words at the end of the Rājasūya in which he had been made a Brāhmaṇ (AB.VII.24); which comings back to one self are in the most technical sense of the word 'desecrations'. In thus returning we are forgetting that the *proprium* to which we return is not our real Self, not really an essence at all, but only a process. It is, on the other hand, with reference to our essence, St. Bernard's *suum*, that it is said 'That art thou' (CU.VI.8.7f.), and with reference to that Self 'the Overlord and King of all beings' (BU.II.5.15), that the Oracle enjoins, *γνῶθι σεαυτόν* (*gnōthi seauton*). When Philosophia enquires of Boethius what he is, and he answers 'a reasoning and mortal animal', she tells him that he has 'forgotten' who he is and warns him: 'If thou knowest not thyself, depart' (*Deconsol.*, prose vi and *Cant.* I.8).

The injunction 'Know thyself' is paralleled in the questions of the Brāhmaṇas and Upaniṣads, 'Which self?' (*katarah sa ātmā*, AA.II.6; *katamā ātmā* BU.IV.3.7, MU.II.1; and similarly *ken'attanā*, S.508) and 'In whom, when I go forth hence, shall I be going forth?' (*kasmin. . . utkrānto bhavisyāmī*, *Prasna* U.VI.3) with the answer in CU.III.14.4 'in Brahma'. The true answer to the question 'Who art thou?' (*kas tvam asi*), viz. 'What thou art, that light am I' (*ko 'ham asmi suvas tvam*), is the password that opens the gates of the Kingdom of Heaven and wins the welcome 'Come in, O myself' (JUB.III.14.1–5; Kaus. U.I.5–6; Rūmī, *Mathnawī*, I.3062 f.). Incidentally, I am convinced that the Delphic *γνῶθι σεαυτόν* (*gnōthi seauton*) and E are a question (*signum*) and an answer (*responsum*) asked and given at the

door (certainly a 'Sundoor') of Apollo's shrine; 'Know thyself implying 'Who art thou', and E=El meaning (1) Apollo and (2) 'thou art' (these are two of Plutarch's interpretations, *Moralia* 392 A), the answer to the question 'Who art thou' (seeking admittance) taking the form 'The Sun thou art' (that am I). 'That thou art, thus may I be', he says in effect. . . Verily, he invokes this blessing' (TS.I.5.7.6). Cf. my 'The 'E' at Delphi' in *Review of Religion*, Nov. 1941.

85. Hence in order to reach their source 'Both *vidyā* and *avidyā* are to be understood' (*vidyām ca avidyām ca yastad vedōbhayam sah. . . amṛtam āśnute*, Īśa Up.11. The world of pairs of opposites, affirmations and negations, good and evil, is a theophany. It has not been said that 'the invisible things of him' (Rom.I.20) are only to be known by those of the things that were made that seem to us 'good'; the obvious answer to the question 'Did he who made the lamb make thee?' is affirmative. The problem of evil ('Can a good God have permitted this?', cf. JUB.I.18.2) can only be posed by a monophysite or a dualist. The Muslim sees in Heaven and Hell the 'reflections' of the divine Mercy (Sacerdotium) and divine Majesty (Regnum). Cf. *Mathnawī* I.1128, 1298, Nicholson's *Mystics of Islam*, p. 98, Goode-nough, Philo.

In That One (*tad ekam, ekam aviviktam, viśvam ekam, advaitam, ekaṭvam*) Mitra and Varuna male and female, lamb and lion 'lie down together'. To praise or blame Him for the existence of any one of these pairs is to praise or blame Him for that of the other, because each presupposes the other, to praise or blame Him for making a world at all, for a world-picture (of love-joy) can only be painted in chiaroscuro, not all in white or all in black. Yet it is *our* ends that the world of good and evil serves, for without it there would be no way of procedure from potentiality to act. It is not the First Cause, but *our* knowledge of good and evil that is the occasion of our mortality (cf. *Chain of Being*). This First Cause, which we cannot call either good or evil in any human sense, is the cause of our existence, but we ourselves are the cause of our manner of being.

It does not follow that the distinction of good from evil and truth from falsehood lacks validity here and now, as though both could be called good. The way to the Unity of Brahma leads from the Darkness, Untruth, and Death to the Light, Reality, and Life (BU.I.3.8); it was by following this 'Ancient Path' (RV.IV.18.1, BU.IV.4.8, S.II.106, IV.117, etc.) that the Devas separated themselves

from the Asuras and became what they are (SB.IX.5.1.12), 'by qualification' (*arhāṇā*) that they (who with exception of Agni were originally mortal) became Immortals (RV.X.63.4), assimilated to him 'whose name is Truth' (CU.VIII.3.4, I John V. 20, etc.). By this *via affirmativa* one rises higher and higher in the hierarchy of degrees of reality or truth (MU.IV.6) until we reach the Sun, who is the Truth absolutely (JUB.I.5.3 and *passim*) but through whom the Way leads on to Brahma; to reach that Unity, the ultimate reality that was hidden by the Truth' (BU.I.6.3), we must deny the names that have been given to God, to know him only as unknown (MU.IV.6, KenaUp.II.3). In other words, the end of the road (*adhvanah pāram*) and summit of contingent being (*bhavāgra*) bring us to a wall through which the only way is by the strait gate of the Sundoor, that bars the way to anyone who still is anyone (Cuṣā, *De Visione Dei*, IX, fin). What lies beyond is 'other than Law or lack of Law, other than our well or ill-done, other than past or future' (*anyatra dharmād anyatrādharmād anyatrāsmāt kṛtakṛtāt anyatra bhūtāc ca bhavyāc ca*, KU.II.14; there, as Eckhart expresses it, 'neither vice nor virtue ever entered in' to Him who is 'neither good nor true'. St. Thomas, *Sum.Theol.* I.46.1 ad 3—*omne quod generatur, generatur ex contrario* = from its opposite, not 'contradicities; 'if based on Phaedo 70E does not mean pairs of opposites but from its opposite, Phaedo 71A—*panta ostō, gignetai, ex enantion ta enantia pragmata*.

86. See note 47. Just as in Christianity, all creation is feminine to God, and in the same way, the body feminine to the Spirit. All birth depends upon the conjugation (*samyoga*) of the 'Knower of the Field' with the 'Field' (BG.XIII); as a wife to a husband, so is the body (*tanū*), which is for the sake of good works (*sukṛtāya kam*), to the Spirit (*ātman*, TS.I.1.10.1-2); the Sun is our real Father (JUB. III.10.4 and RV.X.149.4 *patiriva jāyāmabhi no nyetu dhartā divah savitā viśvavārah*). All this must be taken for granted if the theory of government is to be understood.

It may be added that there is nothing so strange about the relation of Kṛṣṇa to the *gopīs*, his *bhaktas*, as is often supposed: Peter Sterry, for example, writes 'The Lord Jesus hath his Concubines, his Queenes, his Virgines, Saints in Remoter Formes, Saints in higher Formes, Saints unmarried to any Forme, who keep themselves single for the immediate imbraces of their Love' (Vivian da Sola Pinto, *Peter Sterry, Puritan and Platonist*, p. 25). It should be noted that these are the words of a Puritan divine.

door (certainly a 'Sundoor') of Apollo's shrine; 'Know thyself implying 'Who art thou', and E=EI meaning (1) Apollo and (2) 'thou art' (these are two of Plutarch's interpretations, *Moralia* 392 A), the answer to the question 'Who art thou' (seeking admittance) taking the form 'The Sun thou art' (that am I). 'That thou art, thus may I be', he says in effect. . . Verily, he invokes this blessing' (TS.I.5.7.6). Cf. my 'The 'E' at Delphi' in *Review of Religion*, Nov. 1941.

85. Hence in order to reach their source 'Both *vidyā* and *avidyā* are to be understood' (*vidyām ca avidyām ca yastad vedobhayam sah*. . . *amṛtam āsnute*, Īśa Up.11. The world of pairs of opposites, affirmations and negations, good *and* evil, is a theophany. It has not been said that 'the invisible things of him' (Rom.I.20) are only to be known by those of the things that were made that seem to *us* 'good'; the obvious answer to the question 'Did he who made the lamb make thee?' is affirmative. The problem of evil ('Can a good God have permitted this?', cf. JUB.I.18.2) can only be posed by a monophysite or a dualist. The Muslim sees in Heaven and Hell the 'reflections' of the divine Mercy (Sacerdotium) and divine Majesty (Regnum). Cf. *Mathnawī* I.1128, 1298, Nicholson's *Mystics of Islam*, p. 98, Goode-nough, Philo.

In That One (*tad ekam, ekam aviviktam, viśvam ekam, advaitam, ekaṭvam*) Mitra and Varuṇa male and female, lamb and lion 'lie down together'. To praise or blame Him for the existence of any one of these pairs is to praise or blame Him for that of the other, because each presupposes the other, to praise or blame Him for making a world at all, for a world-picture (of love-joy) can only be painted in chiaroscuro, not all in white or all in black. Yet it is *our* ends that the world of good and evil serves, for without it there would be no way of procedure from potentiality to act. It is not the First Cause, but *our* knowledge of good *and* evil that is the occasion of our mortality (cf. *Chain of Being*). This First Cause, which we cannot call either good or evil in any human sense, is the cause of our existence, but we ourselves are the cause of our manner of being.

It does not follow that the distinction of good from evil and truth from falsehood lacks validity here and now, as though both could be called good. The way to the Unity of Brahma leads from the Darkness, Untruth, and Death to the Light, Reality, and Life (BU.I.3.8); it was by following this 'Ancient Path' (RV.IV.18.1, BU.IV.4.8, S.II.106, IV.117, etc.) that the Devas separated themselves

from the Asuras and became what they are (SB.IX.5.1.12), 'by qualification' (*arhāna*) that they (who with exception of Agni were originally mortal) became Immortals (RV.X.63.4), assimilated to him 'whose name is Truth' (CU.VIII.3.4, I John V. 20, etc.). By this *via affirmativa* one rises higher and higher in the hierarchy of degrees of reality or truth (MU.IV.6) until we reach the Sun, who is the Truth absolutely (JUB.I.5.3 and *passim*) but *through* whom the Way leads on to Brahma; to reach that Unity, the ultimate reality that was hidden by the Truth' (BU.I.6.3), we must deny the names that have been given to God, to know him only as unknown (MU.IV.6, KenaUp.II.3). In other words, the end of the road (*adhvanah pāram*) and summit of contingent being (*bhavāgra*) bring us to a wall through which the only way is by the strait gate of the Sundoor, that bars the way to anyone who still is anyone (Cuṣa, *De Visione Dei*, IX, fin). What lies beyond is 'other than Law or lack of Law, other than our well or ill-done, other than past or future' (*anyatra dharmād anyatrādharmād anyatrāsmāt kṛtākṛtāt anyatra bhūtāc ca bhavyāc ca*, KU.II.14; there, as Eckhart expresses it, 'neither vice nor virtue ever entered in' to Him who is 'neither good nor true'. St. Thomas, *Sum.Theol.* I.46.1 ad 3—*omne quod generatur, generatur ex contrario* = from its opposite, *not* 'contradicities; 'if based on *Phaedo* 70E does not mean pairs of opposites but from its opposite, *Phaedo* 71A—*panta ostō, gignetai, ex enantiōn ta enantia pragmata*.

86. See note 47. Just as in Christianity, all creation is feminine to God, and in the same way, the body feminine to the Spirit. All birth depends upon the conjugation (*samyoga*) of the 'Knower of the Field' with the 'Field' (BG.XIII); as a wife to a husband, so is the body (*tanū*), which is for the sake of good works (*sukṛtāya kam*), to the Spirit (*ātman*, TS.I.1.10.1-2); the Sun is our real Father (JUB. III.10.4 and RV.X.149.4 *patiriva jāyāmabhi no nyetu dhartā divah savitā viśvavārah*). All this must be taken for granted if the theory of government is to be understood.

It may be added that there is nothing so strange about the relation of Kṛṣṇa to the *gopīs*, his *bhaktas*, as is often supposed: Peter Sterry, for example, writes 'The Lord Jesus hath his Concubines, his Queenes, his Virgines, Saints in Remoter Formes, Saints in higher Formes, Saints unmarried to any Forme, who keep themselves single for the immediate imbraces of their Love' (Vivian da Sola Pinto, *Peter Sterry, Puritan and Platonist*, p. 25). It should be noted that these are the words of a *Puritan* divine.

Irenaeus (I.13.3) quotes the gnostic Markos, 'Prepare thyself as a bride to receive a bridegroom, that thou mayest be what I am and I what thou art'. Cf. VS.VIII.10 *Agne vākpatim*.

87. The passage is pertinent both to the story of Indra's enlightenment (CU.VIII.7-11) and to that of his fall and apokatastasis (BD.VII.54f.).

88. Plato recognizes two kinds or parts of the 'soul' in us, or two lives or selves, mortal and immortal; with one or the other of these we identify 'ourselves'. The man governed by his desires is (*ēttōn heautou*), 'subject to himself', i.e. to the self that says 'I want'; one who governs his desires is (*creitton heautou*) i.e. 'master of himself', i.e. of the self that says 'I want' (*Laws* 645, *Republic* 431, etc.). In the first case he (the subject predicated by *ēttōn* and *κρείττων creitton*) identifies 'himself' with the *śarira ātman* (*bhūtātman*), 'overcome' by likes and dislikes (MU.III.2), in the second case with the imperturbable *aśarira ātman* (*prajñātman*). The former condition is one of 'ignorance', *avidyā* the latter one of 'wisdom' (*vidyā*) (*Protagoras* 358). The welfare of the 'whole soul' depends upon the harmony of its parts and their 'unanimity as to which shall rule' (*Republic* 432 c). All this is the same for the State and in the individual economy.

89. Cf. Mund. U. III.I.4. The language is equally applicable to the political economy of Regnum and Sacerdotium, and to the individual economy of the 'two selves', Outer King and Inner Sage.

For the *kāmācārin* cf. RV.IX.113.9; JUB.III.28.3; CU.VIII.5.4; Taitt. U.III.5; D.I.172; John X.9; and *HJAS*.IV.1939, p. 35.

As it is primarily the Gale of the Spirit that 'moveth as it will' (*yathāvaśām*, RV.X.168.4; *anilo viya yathā kāmām*, J.V. 418; John III.8), so it is only one 'gone with the wind' (Kauś U.II.12, etc.) in the sense of the requiem *gacchatu vātam ātmā* (RV.X.16.3) that can be called 'free'; or to use the language of NT., only those who are 'in the spirit' (*pneumati*) that can 'pass in and out'.

90. Similarly the Buddhist D.I.172, forming part of the instruction of a King in the 'Advantages of the Monastic Life': the servant of desire is his own slave, not his own master nor able to go where he will (*na yena kāmām gamo = na kāmācārin*), while the man 'the doors of whose senses are guarded (*indriyesu gutta-dvāro = atta-gutto*, Dh. 379) is his own master, freed from his slavery *dāsavyā mutto, asura* nature) and able to go where he will'. In almost identical language Plato describes those who are 'subject to themselves (see Note 88) as 'freeman only in name' (*Republic* 431C). He tells us also regarding the education of

Persian princes, that they had four tutors, respectively most wise, most just, most temperate, and most brave. The first taught him the Magian lore* of Zoroaster, the second always to be truthful, the fourth to be fearless, and the third 'not to be mastered even by a single pleasure, in order that he may acquire the habit of being a free and real King, one who is first of all the ruler of whatever (powers) are in himself, and not their slave' (*Alcibiades* I.122). We can readily believe that the Persian and Indian conceptions of Kingship were indeed alike, Cf. Cicero, *De Divinatione* I.91—'Nor can anyone be king of the Persians who beforehand does not understand the greater discipline and science'. And on the *Graal King* See Philo, QE 105, Goodenough p. 113.

91. The 'free-will' that Christian doctrine asserts for all is evidently not the 'self-will', but rather a freedom to resist or consent to the higher will, that of the spirit ('the spirit is willing but the flesh is weak,' Math. XXVI.41). To do our own will is to be passive; to cooperate with the spirit is to be in act. cf. note 69. That the natural man is an automaton is admirably demonstrated in S.III.66-67 (see *HJAS* IV, 1939, p.135).

92. *Samprayat*, to 'proffer', correlative of *Vṛ* to 'woo'.

93. i.e. *param jyotirūpa sampadya svena rūpena abhiniṣpadyante* (CU.VIII.12.3).

94. AB.VII.15, S.I.61-62, A.II.48-49, see my 'The Pilgrim's Way' in *JBORS* XXIII and XXIV, 1937, 1938.

95. Thomas Kempis, *The Imitation of Christ* III chap. XIII—'There is no worse, and no more grievous enemy to thy soul than thyself, if thine flesh be not well agreeing to the will of the spirit.'

96. Cf. Walt Whitman—'My dinner, dress, associates, looks . . . the sickness of one of my folks or of myself, or ill doing or loss or lack of money, or depressions or exaltations. . . these come to me days and nights and go from me again. But they are not this Me myself. Apart from the pulling and hauling stands what I am. . . Both in and out of the game and watching and wondering at it.'

97. The whole of this symbolism recurs in Plato (*Phaedrus* 246, 247, etc.) and Hermes Trismegistus (I.11f., etc.).

98. How is the victory to be won in this *Jehād*? Our self is the enemy (Die before you die), in its ignorance of and opposition to its self is the enemy to be convinced. The way is one of intellectual

*On the Magi, see Philo *Spec. Loeb. Lib.* 632f.

Irenaeus (I.13.3) quotes the gnostic Markos, 'Prepare thyself as a bride to receive a bridegroom, that thou mayest be what I am and I what thou art'. Cf. VS.VIII.10 *Agne vākpatim*.

87. The passage is pertinent both to the story of Indra's enlightenment (CU.VIII.7-11) and to that of his fall and apokatastasis (BD.VII.54f.).

88. Plato recognizes two kinds or parts of the 'soul' in us, or two lives or selves, mortal and immortal; with one or the other of these we identify 'ourselves'. The man governed by his desires is (*ēttōn heautou*), 'subject to himself', i.e. to the self that says 'I want'; one who governs his desires is (*creitton heautou*) i.e. 'master of himself', i.e. of the self that says 'I want' (*Laws* 645, *Republic* 431, etc.). In the first case he (the subject predicated by *ēttōn* and κρείττων *creitton*) identifies 'himself' with the *śarira ātman* (*bhūtātman*), 'overcome' by likes and dislikes (MU.III.2), in the second case with the imperturbable *aśarira ātman* (*prajñātman*). The former condition is one of 'ignorance', *avidyā* the latter one of 'wisdom' (*vidyā*) (*Protagoras* 358). The welfare of the 'whole soul' depends upon the harmony of its parts and their 'unanimity as to which shall rule' (*Republic* 432 c). All this is the same for the State and in the individual economy.

89. Cf. Muṇḍ. U. III.I.4. The language is equally applicable to the political economy of Regnum and Sacerdotium, and to the individual economy of the 'two selves', Outer King and Inner Sage.

For the *kāmācārin* cf. RV.IX.113.9; JUB.III.28.3; CU.VIII.5.4; Taitt, U.III.5; D.I.172; John X.9; and *HJAS*.IV.1939, p. 35.

As it is primarily the Gale of the Spirit that 'moveth as it will' (*yathāvāśām*, RV.X.168.4; *anilo viya yathā kāmām*, J.V. 418; John III.8), so it is only one 'gone with the wind' (Kauṣ U.II.12, etc.) in the sense of the requiem *gacchatu vātam ātmā* (RV.X.16.3) that can be called 'free'; or to use the language of NT., only those who are 'in the spirit' (*pneumati*) that can 'pass in and out'.

90. Similarly the Buddhist D.I.172, forming part of the instruction of a King in the 'Advantages of the Monastic Life': the servant of desire is his own slave, not his own master nor able to go where he will (*na yena kāmām gamo = na kāmācārin*), while the man 'the doors of whose senses are guarded (*indriyesu gutta-dvāro = atta-gutto*, Dh. 379) is his own master, freed from his slavery *dāsavyā mutto, asura* nature) and able to go where he will'. In almost identical language Plato describes those who are 'subject to themselves (see Note 88) as 'freeman only in name' (*Republic* 431C). He tells us also regarding the education of

Persian princes, that they had four tutors, respectively most wise, most just, most temperate, and most brave. The first taught him the Magian lore* of Zoroaster, the second always to be truthful, the fourth to be fearless, and the third 'not to be mastered even by a single pleasure, in order that he may acquire the habit of being a free and real King, one who is first of all the ruler of whatever (powers) are in himself, and not their slave' (*Alcibiades* I.122). We can readily believe that the Persian and Indian conceptions of Kingship were indeed alike, Cf. Cicero, *De Divinatione* I.91—'Nor can anyone be king of the Persians who beforehand does not understand the greater discipline and science'. And on the *Graal King*" See Philo, QE 105, Goodenough p. 113.

91. The 'free-will' that Christian doctrine asserts for all is evidently not the 'self-will', but rather a freedom to resist or consent to the higher will, that of the spirit ('the spirit is willing but the flesh is weak,' Math. XXVI.41). To do our own will is to be passive; to cooperate with the spirit is to be in act. cf. note 69. That the natural man is an automaton is admirably demonstrated in S.III.66-67 (see *HJAS* IV, 1939, p.135).

92. *Samprayat*, to 'proffer', correlative of *Vṛ* to 'woo'.

93. i.e. *param jyotirīpa sampadya svena nīpena abhinispadyante* (CU.VIII.12.3).

94. AB.VII.15, S.I.61-62, A.II.48-49, see my 'The Pilgrim's Way' in *JBORS* XXIII and XXIV, 1937, 1938.

95. Thomas Kempis, *The Imitation of Christ* III chap.XIII—'There is no worse, and no more grievous enemy to thy soul than thyself, if thine flesh be not well agreeing to the will of the spirit.'

96. Cf. Walt Whitman—'My dinner, dress, associates, looks . . . the sickness of one of my folks or of myself, or ill doing or loss or lack of money, or depressions or exaltations. . . these come to me days and nights and go from me again. But they are not this Me myself. Apart from the pulling and hauling stands what I am. . . Both in and out of the game and watching and wondering at it.'

97. The whole of this symbolism recurs in Plato (*Phaedrus* 246, 247, etc.) and Hermes Trismegistus (I.11f., etc.).

98. How is the victory to be won in this *Jehād*? Our self is the enemy (Die before you die), in its ignorance of and opposition to its self is the enemy to be convinced. The way is one of intellectual

*On the Magi, see Philo *Spec. Loeb. Lib.* 632f.

preparation, moral discipline, leading, and contemplation; in other words, at the same time a theory and a way of living.

The intellectual preparation is philosophical (the word), as 'philosophy' was understood by the ancients. The proper object of philosophy in this sense is stated in the words of the Delphic oracle 'Know thy Self' (*gnōthi seauton*).

99. Plato, 'God is our guardian, and we are his possessions' (*Phaedo*, 60D).

100. An identical interpretation of 'sleep' will be found in Hermes Trismegistus *Lib.I.1*. The Outer Man, whom we think of as 'awake' is *really asleep* and dreaming; the Inner and contemplative Man whom we think of as 'asleep' when we fail to understand the metaphysical 'inaction' is *really awake* and in act, in the sense that the Buddha is literally the 'Wake' and the anagogical (*paramārthika*) sense in which Agni is 'wakened at daybreak' (*uṣar-budh*).

101. For the 'person in the (right) eye' see BU.IV.2.2, 3 and IV.4.1, CU.I.7.5, MU.VII.11.1-3. This image seen in the pupil of the eye is the form of our real being and that of the 'Person in the Sun' who is called variously Death, Breath, and usually Indra; the 'Person in the Sun' being 'Indra; Prajapati, Brahma' (Sacerdotium) (KB.VIII.3). In SB.III.1.3.15 it is Śuṣṇa that becomes the pupil of the eye.

The symbolism of the 'person seen in the eye' is probably ancient. Plato (*Alcibiades* I.133) uses it in a slightly different way, but for him also it is a form analogous to what in us is most like God.

102. *Āticchandā*, usually interpreted to mean 'beyond desires', but really with more direct reference to the *chandāni* which are the means of our metrical re-integration and the wings on which the Spirit ascends to the Sun (AV.VIII.9.2, AB.VII.27, etc.). 'Yonder Sun is the Disposer; and it is inasmuch as he hath gone unto the uttermost of the Quarters that there he stands and glows. . . . The Metres are the Quarters' (*diso hy ētāś chāndānsi*, SB. IX.5.1.37, 39). *Āticchandā* (for *āticchandam*) in BU.IV.3.21 is, according to Śaṅkara, beyond desires'; but I think that the reference is to the 'whole and complete' form, like that of the Fire-altar, *āticchandās* in SB.X.5.4.8, where the meaning of the word is certainly 'hypermetrical' or 'super-metrical.' so in TS.V.3.8.3—'all the metres are the Aticchandas; verily he piles it with all the metres. The Aticchandas is the highest of the metres. . . .'

103. 'In the embrace of this sovran one which naughts the separated self of things, being is one without distinction. . . . One and one uniting, void shines into void. . . . so does the soul in God turn into

God.' Eckhart, English trans. of Pfeiffer's version by C.de B. Evans, I.pp.368, 380

104. On the Synteresis (essentially the same as Plato's immanent *logos daimon*, and *hēgemōn*, and or 'con-science' but with far more than the merely moral values that this latter word now implies for us) see O.Renz. *Die Synteresis nach dem heiligen Thomas von Aquin Münster*, 1911. 'Synteresis' is etymologically Skr. *sarhtāraka* √*tr*), 'One who enables another to cross over' (to the farther shore'), and so 'savior' or 'deliverer'.

105. For this expression see Masson—Oursel, 'Une connexion dans l'esthétique de la philosophie de l'Inde,' *Revue des Arts Asiatiques* II, 1925. 'A connection in the aesthetics of Indian Philosophy.'

106. The *indriyani* are the five organs of sense, the five corresponding internal faculties, and the mind (*manas*); these correspond to what are called by Christian writers the 'powers of the soul.' They are properly called *indriyāṇī* because of their belonging to Indra, whose they are (cf. TS.I.6.12.1, SB.VI.1.1.2). They are, in fact, the 'powers'. (*śacīḥ*) by which Indra is 'empowered' (*śacivat*) and is the 'Lord of power' (*śacīḥ*) as he is of Indrāṇī (*indrāṇīm . . . pātiḥ*, RV.X.86.11.12). Taken together, the *śacīḥ* and Śaci; the *indriyāṇī*, the powers of the soul, the soul herself. The marriage of Indra and Indrāṇī is that of the Sun and Moon, Eros and Psyche.

Rightly curbed, the *indriyani* are 'powers of rule,' but allowed full rein, are the 'ruling passions' to which we are subjected. 'The place of rulers is held by those who exercise authority over the sense.' Philo, *De Agricultura*, 58.

107. Apollonius, *Epistle and Valerium*—*archōn aristos, ho an hautou proteron archē*.

Bonaventura, *De Donae Sancto Spirito*, IV.10, t.v.p. 475.—'No one can have an ordered household unless he himself is ordered. If anyone wishes to have chaste servants, and he himself be not chaste, it cannot be.' See also *Chuang Tzu*, p. 148; Behmen, *Supersensual Life*, p. 229, and Marcus Aurelius 14, 15, on 'Self-government.'

108. 'Kṛtsnam hi śāstram idam indriya-jayah.'

The concept of 'Victory' is of the utmost importance in the traditional theory of Kingship. Exoterically it is by an actual or implied victory over others that a King obtains the throne, but esoterically he is the true Victor who subdues his own passions, allying himself with the Self against himself. In Islam this becomes the concept of the 'Holy War' (*jihād*) as distinguished from mere wars of

conquest. The 'heroism' (*virya, andreia*) expected of the Knight (*ksatriya*), whether as King or as the Mortal Soul and Outer Man, is then no longer a matter of merely physical courage (such as animals also possess), but a symbol and evidence of self-conquest and self-knowledge; autonomy, as we have seen, being the outward tally of an inward Self-control. Whoever has thus found Himself is necessarily both fearless and 'invulnerable' (AV.X.8.44, BG.II, etc.). When the martyr says: 'I have fought the good fight', this good fight is the Holy War. This does not mean that the two wars must be separately fought; the man-at-arms may be waging a war that is humanly speaking 'just', and, if he be a Comprehensor, at the same time one that is 'holy'. In the latter case the battle itself becomes a sacrificial rite. It is in this way that it can be said of War that 'Some he has marked out to be Gods, and some to be men, some to be enslaved and some to be set free' (Heracleitus, Fr. XLIV). It is one thing to be 'free' to do what one likes; only to have the 'Victory over pleasures' (*hē tōn hēdonōn nikē*) Plato, *Laws* 840 C is to be really free.

It is clear from the great king Asoka's Thirteenth Edict that he had understood the real meaning of 'Victory'; for after recounting his political victories and expressing his deep regret for them, because of the suffering inflicted on the conquered, he continues (line 7), 'And this is the foremost Victory, the Victory of the Dharma; while (line 10, 11) he enjoins upon his successors to 'regard as 'Victory' the Victory of the Dharma, which avails for this world and the other.'

In the beginning, it was the Brahma-Yakṣa that won the Victory (over the Asuras) for the Devas, and it is asked: 'Can he be conquered who is a Comprehensor of that Great First-born Yakṣa, who knows that Brahma to be the Truth?' (TS.VI.5.7.4, JUB.IV.21, Kena Up.III.1f., etc.).

109. 'What is the best thing of all for a man, that he may ask from the Gods? "That he may be always at peace with himself."

Contest of Homer and Hesiod, 320.

Works noted in A.K. Coomaraswamy's copy of the First Edition as additional references

- | | |
|--------------------------|--|
| F.W. Buckler. | : <i>Epiphany of the Cross</i> , 1938. |
| | : <i>Firdausī's Shāhnāmah and the Geneologia Regni Dei</i> , Supplement to the JAOS, No. 1, 1935. |
| W.W. Comfort | : <i>Chretien de Troyes</i> , Everyman's Libray. |
| R.E. Dennett | : <i>At the Back of the Black Man's Mind</i> , 1906. |
| I. Engnell | : <i>Studies in Divine Kingship—the Ancient Near East</i> . Uppsala, 1943. |
| C.A.M. Fennell | : <i>Pindar</i> , 1899. |
| J.N. Figgis | : <i>The Theory of the Divine Right of Kings</i> , C.U.P., 1896. |
| T.H. Gaster | : <i>Divine Kingship in the Ancient Near East</i> , Review of Religion, Vol. IX, 1945. |
| E.R. Goodenough | : <i>An Introduction to Philo Judaeus</i> , 1940. <i>Hellenistic Kingship</i> , Yale Classical Studies, I, 1928. |
| A.M. Hocart | : <i>Kingship</i> , London, 1941,
<i>Les Castes</i> , Paris, 1938; <i>Caste—A Comparative Study</i> , London, 1950. |
| Gualtherus H. Mees | : <i>Dharma and Society</i> , The Hague, 1935. |
| K.V. Rangaswami Aiyangar | : <i>Rajadharma</i> , Madras, 1941. |
| R. Shamaśāstry | : <i>Kautilya's Arthaśāstra</i> , Mysore, 1951. |
| J. Gonda | : <i>Ancient Indian Kingship from the Religious Point of View</i> , from NVMEN, Vols. III, IV, 1966, Brill, Leiden. |

conquest. The 'heroism' (*virya, andreia*) expected of the Knight (*kṣatriya*), whether as King or as the Mortal Soul and Outer Man, is then no longer a matter of merely physical courage (such as animals also possess), but a symbol and evidence of self-conquest and self-knowledge; autonomy, as we have seen, being the outward tally of an inward Self-control. Whoever has thus found Himself is necessarily both fearless and 'invulnerable' (AV.X.8.44, BG.II, etc.). When the martyr says: 'I have fought the good fight', this good fight is the Holy War. This does not mean that the two wars must be separately fought; the man-at-arms may be waging a war that is humanly speaking 'just', and, if he be a Comprehensor, at the same time one that is 'holy'. In the latter case the battle itself becomes a sacrificial rite. It is in this way that it can be said of War that 'Some he has marked out to be Gods, and some to be men, some to be enslaved and some to be set free' (Heracleitus, Fr. XLIV). It is one thing to be 'free' to do what one likes; only to have the 'Victory over pleasures' (*hē tōn hēdonōn nikē*) Plato, *Laws* 840 C is to be really free.

It is clear from the great king Asoka's Thirteenth Edict that he had understood the real meaning of 'Victory'; for after recounting his political victories and expressing his deep regret for them, because of the suffering inflicted on the conquered, he continues (line 7), 'And this is the foremost Victory, the Victory of the Dharma,'; while (line 10, 11) he enjoins upon his successors to 'regard as 'Victory' the Victory of the Dharma, which avails for this world and the other.'

In the beginning, it was the Brahma-Yakṣa that won the Victory (over the Asuras) for the Devas, and it is asked: 'Can he be conquered who is a Comprehensor of that Great First-born Yakṣa, who knows that Brahma to be the Truth?' (TS.VI.5.7.4, JUB.IV.21, Kena Up.III.1f., etc.).

109. 'What is the best thing of all for a man, that he may ask from the Gods? "That he may be always at peace with himself."

Contest of Homer and Hesiod, 320.

Works noted in A.K. Coomaraswamy's copy of the First Edition as additional references

- | | |
|--------------------------|--|
| F.W. Buckler | : <i>Epiphany of the Cross</i> , 1938. |
| | : <i>Firdausī's Shāhnāmah and the Geneologia Regni Dei</i> , Supplement to the JAOS, No. 1, 1935. |
| W.W. Comfort | : <i>Chretien de Troyes</i> , Everyman's Libray. |
| R.E. Dennett | : <i>At the Back of the Black Man's Mind</i> , 1906. |
| I. Engnell | : <i>Studies in Divine Kingship—the Ancient Near East</i> . Uppsala, 1943. |
| C.A.M. Fennell | : <i>Pindar</i> , 1899. |
| J.N. Figgis | : <i>The Theory of the Divine Right of Kings</i> , C.U.P., 1896. |
| T.H. Gaster | : <i>Divine Kingship in the Ancient Near East</i> , Review of Religion, Vol. IX, 1945. |
| E.R. Goodenough | : <i>An Introduction to Philo Judaeus</i> , 1940. <i>Hellenistic Kingship</i> , Yale Classical Studies, I, 1928. |
| A.M. Hocart | : <i>Kingship</i> , London, 1941,
<i>Les Castes</i> , Paris, 1938; <i>Caste—A Comparative Study</i> , London, 1950. |
| Gualtherus H. Mees | : <i>Dharma and Society</i> , The Hague, 1935. |
| K.V. Rangaswami Aiyangar | : <i>Rajadharma</i> , Madras, 1941. |
| R. Shamaśāstry | : <i>Kautilya's Arthaśāstra</i> , Mysore, 1951. |
| J. Gonda | : <i>Ancient Indian Kingship from the Religious Point of View</i> , from NVMEN, Vols. III, IV, 1966, Brill, Leiden. |

Sri Keshavram N. Iengar (b. 1928) graduated from Bombay University with a B. Sc. in Physics and Mathematics and a Government Diploma in Architecture. He was also a student at the Federal Institute of Technology, Zurich, Switzerland, from 1948 to 1950. Starting his professional career as an architectural assistant at Madras, he was associated in the field of architecture for over 25 years with the Madras and Bangalore Universities. Later, he was Professor of Architecture at the B. M. S. College, Bangalore. An amateur Hindustani *Khayal* singer, Sri Iengar is an exponent of the Gwalior *Gharana* of Hindustani classical music.

Dr Rama P. Coomaraswamy (b. 1929) is the only surviving son of Dr Ananda K. Coomaraswamy. He graduated from Medical School in 1952 and was subsequently trained and certified in General as well as in Thoracic and Cardio-Vascular Surgery. Later, he was Associate Professor of Surgery at the Albert Einstein College of Medicine, New York. At present, he is Professor of Ecclesiastical History at the St. Thomas Aquinas Seminary in Connecticut. He has authored over 40 articles in the surgical research field as well as innumerable articles in theology and philosophy.

Cover design: Salim Memi

ISBN 0 19 563143 9

Rs 200



No three representatives of Asia have done more to reveal eastern culture to the west than Swami Vivekananda, Rabindranath Tagore and A. K. Coomaraswamy. The illuminating writings and lectures of A. K. Coomaraswamy have brought the east and west together in a meaningful dialogue. His mind encompassed the sum total of tradition in the east and the west. It ranged from ancient Greece, the World of Islam, and that of medieval Europe to the present situation. Measured against his knowledge, the modern mind confronted him in its fragmentation, estranged from tradition and the perennial source of wisdom he called '*Philosophia Perennis*'.